



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 11

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1001: Concubine? Why Not!

Ye Xiao felt warm in the heart.

Song Jue cared for him from the bottom of his heart. That was the bond between families.

It was priceless!

"Good! Kid, you are a man now. Hahahaha. Like father like son." Song Jue was so happy. He laughed loudly and then looked at Xuan Bing, who was wearing black robe and silk mask. His eyes lit up and he laughed even more happily. "Xiao Xiao, good for you. You must know how much I miss you two. You actually came together. I am so happy today. Hahaha..."

"Uh?" Ye Xiao looked at Song Jue with confusion. Apparently, he didn't understand it.

"Stop pretending! Is this supposed to be a surprise? Well, you got me!" Song Jue laughed and said, "You are a good lad. You actually found Bing'er and brought her to me. I have been working so hard trying to find her earlier, but I got nothing. Hahaha. Bing'er is a good girl..."

Ye Xiao's expression changed. He stopped Song Jue. "Uncle Song, this must be a mistake."

Ye Xiao wasn't impatient. What Song Jue said was too much. Song Fei insulted her so all those men were dead because of her fury. What if Song Jue pissed Xuan Bing even though he didn't mean to?

If Xuan Bing felt offended again, Ye Xiao, Song Jue, Han Bingxue, and all the others would have to die!

Song Jue laughed and spoke arrogantly, "Bullsh*t! Stop pretending, you little prick! Your Uncle Song has sharp eyes. I never mistake people. She is Bing'er! If she isn't, I will dig out my eyeballs and step on them on the floor! You may not be as familiar

to Bing'er as I do!"

And then he said seriously, "Look. Xiao Xiao. Bing'er is alone. She got nobody. You have to treat her well. You have to at least give her the position as a concubine! I am making the decision for you! I can!"

He pointed at Xuan Bing and said, "The girl is wise and lovely. What? Do you think it is a loss for you to have her as your concubine? Stop nagging. Or I will slap you hard!"

- Bang! -

It sounded loudly.

Han Bingxue fell to the floor after staggering for a while when he heard what Song Jue said. He just couldn't believe what he had heard.

[Concubine?]

[The girl?]

[That...]

"Is this world crazy..." He held his head and shouted, "I don't understand it anymore... What is this... Oh... Heavens..."

The 'concubine' idea had a huge blast on his mind. He felt like fainting when he heard what was said.

[Xuan Bing!]

[That is Xuan Bing we are talking about!]

[Song Jue must be daring. He actually pointed at her and talked about how she would become Ye Xiao's concubine... and even called her Bing'er... like he was so sure about it...]

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly and said, "Uncle Song, it's a mistake. Really. She is not Bing'er. No..."

What he had in mind was to hope Xuan Bing realized how important and irreplaceable Song Jue was, so that she would spare

his life. However, he knew he would have to be punished!

His smile was utterly bitter because of it. Song Jue was not Han Bingxue. Han Bingxue was arrogant, but he knew what he should do and what he shouldn't. He knew clearly there was somebody he couldn't mess with. He knew clearly who Xuan Bing was. However, Song Jue had a bad temper. He would do anything he wanted if he was emotional. He would never accept a punishment from a young lady!

Song Jue shook his head and said, "How is that possible? Are you blind? That is Bing'er! Listen, if you dare to abandon Bing'er, I will slap you real hard, kid..."

Then he turned around and carefully looked at Xuan Bing again.

Xuan Bing was standing there, with a huge mass of cold qi around her.

Was she mad?

No. Not really!

She was upset!

She had been trying to hide herself. She even covered her entire body. She didn't want anybody to recognize her. Song Jue, however, didn't even take a close look at her, but he actually knew it was her.

That was why she was upset!

However, she wasn't mad at Song Jue. Song Jue was always nice to her. He was actually kind and gentle like a father to her. What he said to Ye Xiao was for her own good. How could she possibly be mad at such a man?

Besides, Song Jue didn't say anything wrong. Bing'er was actually a concubine to Ye Xiao and she enjoyed it. She wanted to be his concubine!

However, after all, that was Bing-er not Xuan Bing!

She was now the great Elder Xuan Bing of the great Misty Cloud Palace!

What Song Jue said only brought embarrassment to her.

Ye Xiao didn't know Song Jue was right at all.

"Uncle Song, you are wrong..." Ye Xiao hurriedly stopped Song Jue and even started to beg him, "She really isn't her."

Song Jue looked at Xuan Bing. He was shocked. He murmured, "No? Really? But..."

"I said no... She isn't!" Ye Xiao nodded.

Song Jue felt embarrassed.

When he saw Xuan Bing in her black clothes following after Ye Xiao, he just had a strong feeling that she was Bing'er. He was so happy so he just said what he had in mind.

However, after rational observation, the lady was all covered behind the clothes and mask. He had no evidence to tell that she was Bing'er.

Besides... she didn't feel exactly like Bing'er after all...

[Well... that is...]

Song Jue was embarrassed. [It is normal that sometimes I mistake somebody for someone else... but I didn't even see her face earlier... What happened to me? Why would I say it out without thinking!]

...

Chapter 1002: Strong Background

"Well... Urh... I am so sorry." Song Jue produced a smile out of embarrassment, "I was being too emotional so I mistook you for someone else... Please forgive me, lady..."

Although he got an ill temper, he was a reasonable man. Well, at least he was reasonable to his friends and families!

He knew that even though the woman in black was not Bing'er, she must be a friend, so he figured he should apologize!

Xuan Bing took a sigh of relief and humphed. And then she said, "It's alright."

For Xuan Bing, this might be the best situation. No matter what Song Jue had said, no matter how nervous and anxious Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were, no matter how much they realized the situation was serious, no matter how stunned the Song Clan people were, no matter how mad she was, she could have done nothing!

Could she really do anything to Song Jue?

No. No matter what, despite of Ye Xiao's existence, she would never hurt Song Jue!

She would never hurt Song Jue, not to mention the latter had apologized already, so she figured she should accept it!

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were so shocked. They could hardly believe it. Ye Xiao felt better. He thought Xuan Bing forgave him because of his ability to give her Regeneration Ink Lotus.

Han Bingxue was totally astonished. His eyeballs nearly dropped out of the eye frames. [What did Song Jue just say? He said she was Ye Xiao's concubine again and again. That should be a huge humiliation to Xuan Bing considering the high position she had in the martial world.]

[Even if what he said was true, which was definitely not... he

shouldn't have said that!]

[Xuan Bing doesn't have a good temper. Even if Song Jue had the protection from gods, even if he had Wu Fa, the most powerful cultivator in the world to be his guard, Xuan Bing should have slapped him into a pile of meat!]

[Yet... Xuan Bing just said 'that's alright'!]

[That's it?]

Han Bingxue was almost about to pass out.

He wanted to shout out loudly. 'What is going on, sister? He has frankly humiliated you yet you said that's alright? I don't know you anymore!'

When he saw Ye Xiao, Song Jue, and Xuan Bing were having a good and friendly conversation, he was stunned. He felt that the world had become so terrible, that the ants could talk freely to a dinosaur.

Suddenly, he had something in mind. It was a special idea that scared himself to sweat.

[Wait. This isn't right. It doesn't make sense. I am not an ignorant man. I know what bad temper she's got...]

[After being humiliated like that, she actually didn't rage up? She just accepted the apology like that? Isn't it weird?]

[There... There must be a story hidden behind all this... Is there?]
He was confused. He then had that terrifying idea in mind again. [Could it... Could it be true... that Xuan Bing is exactly boss's concubine?]

He nearly passed out again when he thought of it.

Then he slapped on his own face hard trying to refresh his mind.

[What am I thinking? Elder Xuan Bing, such a great figure, how would she become a concubine to somebody?]

[That's stupid.]

[Besides, boss doesn't say anything about it. He doesn't see her as his concubine or something. There are only Song Jue's words.]

He never knew that the truth was always in the hand of the minority. The truth was exactly what Song Jue said!

The truth was too indescribable!

Xuan Bing heard the slapping sound, so she turned around and stared at Han Bingxue with her cold eyes.

She was calm, at least peaceful to Song Jue, because she used to be Bing'er for a long time. Deep in her heart, she was still the super powerful cultivator in the world who had been traveling the realm for countless days. She was so experienced. When she realized Han Bingxue was slapping himself, she had a good guess on the mental state of Han Bingxue, so she was pissed.

Under the cold gaze of Xuan Bing, Han Bingxue ran out hurriedly in an awkward way.

She was full of anger, yet she got nowhere to vent it out. She made up her mind, [After this, I am going to beat him up eight times a day!]

[It has to be at least eight times a day!]

[At least!]

"Ahem, please accept my apology, lady. I am old and I guess my eyes are not working so well. I did mistake you for somebody else." Song Jue smiled awkwardly. "It's just... I haven't met Xiao Xiao for too long. Suddenly, I saw him, and I was too surprised to find anything to start the conversation... haha..."

"It's fine." Xuan Bing was being polite.

She didn't know how to talk to Uncle Song, so she just said some simple words.

Song Clan people finally said something, "Little Jue, are they

your friends?"

Compared to Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao, Song Clan people didn't have any special reaction to what just happened.

After all, in their eyes, although Ye Xiao was the weakest in cultivation, he held the lead. Song Jue might have said something wrong, but he was an old friend to Ye Xiao. Even though he had said something wrong that might humiliate Xuan Bing, but it wasn't a big deal. Besides, what they saw was that Xuan Bing didn't care about it at all!

Song Jue wanted to just ignore his own people. He figured Xuan Bing was quite generous. He liked her. When he wanted to talk to her and ignored his own people, Ye Xiao looked into his eyes with a hint. So he said, "Hmm. He is my sworn brother's son. We haven't met for a long time... Heh, heh."

Xuan Bing heard it and felt annoyed. [A dishonest nephew has a lying uncle. A long time? It's merely about one year!]

Song Clan people were stunned.

[Son of your sworn brother?]

[Holy heavens. Song Jue, you have an incredibly powerful sworn brother. Han Bingxue has been following his son and calling him boss all along!]

[What level is your sworn brother? It must be really high!]

[Why don't you tell us that you have such a powerful brother?]

[You have been leading us to the sh*t hall...]

[That young man could have told us the truth...]

Song Clan people were sweating because of nervousness.

[Holy heavens. Was Song Jue going to wipe us all out? Otherwise, why did he keep enduring and didn't tell us anything?]

Meanwhile, when they looked at Song Jue, they had different

expression in the eyes. It was fear.

...

Chapter 1003: My Name Is Xuan Bing!

Song Jue was sensitive. He noticed his people being strange. He loudly spoke, "My sworn brother is just my sworn brother. He and I, we are brothers. It has nothing to do with the Song Clan. I don't need you to treat me differently just because of my sworn brother. I don't need it. I don't care. I am just like this. You don't need to look at me like this! I have never been interested in your business in the clan. It has nothing to do with me. It's just rubbish to me."

The elders were embarrassed. They were wordless.

Song Jue shouted out all that. It was disrespecting the elders. They felt embarrassed, however, there was nothing they could do. After all, they had truly failed Song Jue's group in the past.

Song Jue occupied the higher moral position. He could be polite, and he had all the rights not to. There was nothing others could say about him!

Everybody saw that. Everybody knew that.

They all knew that grudges filled Song Jue's chest.

Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice, "Uncle Song, it is too easy to kill. They are your own kin after all. Maybe you should let what happened to stay in the past. Besides, Song Wuyang and his group were all cleaned out. I believe what happened to you would never happen again. Maybe you should let it go... At the very least, Song Clan needs your leadership. I believe your clan is going to rise sooner or later."

What he said had announced Song Jue's leadership. There was nothing others could change!

Song Jue was going to rule the clan.

He humphed and spoke with hatred, "Because of Brother Ye, these assholes not only thought of their own safety, but also hit us when they knew we are down... Did they ever remember I am their

own kin..."

Before he finished, Ye Xiao interrupted, "Uncle Song, I won't say different words. Just let it go. We should make sure that the Song Clan will never do the same thing. Isn't it much better than complaining about the past?"

Song Jue heavily humphed. The flame of anger in his eyes were burning the elders. He then turned away and kept silent.

Ye Xiao sighed.

What his father did, no matter for what, affected two clans. One was the Ye Clan, his own clan, while the other was the Song Clan.

That was exactly why Ye Xiao wanted to help the Song Clan.

He did it for Song Jue!

Song Clan people meant nothing to Ye Xiao. He wouldn't care if they were dead.

However, Ye Nantian owed Song Jue.

Song Jue didn't care, because Ye Nantian was his brother!

However, Ye Xiao couldn't just stand and watch it.

If not, he would have wiped the entire Song Clan out because of what Song Fei had done in the town, even though he favored Song Xuan.

He helped to make some arrangements in the Song Clan. Song Jue still didn't show any kindness to the elders. The elders kept smiling in an awkward way. Song Jue led Ye Xiao to his own yard.

What was left to the others in Song Clan was only deep regret.

"I wouldn't do that if I knew things would reach this point." An elder was regretting, "We have been standing aside when Song Wuyang and his people did those filthy things. What we wanted was our own safety... Now... Now, we eventually tasted the fruit that we planted. We don't get to blame anyone else."

"Oh." Another elder sighed.

"This isn't the end though. It isn't too late. No matter what, the Song Clan is settled after all." An elder said, "Song Jue and his people may still have a grudge, but they are still in the clan with us.

"That means they still have feelings to the clan. We should cooperate with them, and support them with whatever we can in the future.

"To think deeper into it, what happened today may be an opportunity for our clan to rise again. Song Jue and Song Sheng, the brothers can take charge of the clan. I guess we will rise again soon."

"That's right. Maybe today will be a Memorial Day for the rise of the Song Clan!"

"True! We are old. We don't have profound views and brave hearts anymore. It is time to let Song Jue and Song Sheng take the responsibility. Maybe we are going to have some tough days afterwards, but we must accept it. Everything should be for the sake of our clan. We can't make a Song Clan on our own after all... We must do whatever benefits our clan..."

The elders, whose hair were grey, sighed and staggered away.

They used to look strong and stand straight up, yet they were stooped now.

However, they also felt like they had dropped down a heavy stone in their heart. At least Song Wuyang died and there would be no more crisis to the Song Clan in the short future.

What happened in the future was left to the future...

Maybe the elders would all be dead when Song Clan was facing another crisis...

They truly only considered the benefits of the clan. They were

selfless. That was why the clan could be passed down from generation to generation.

That was also why there was a tragedy from generation to generation.

It was hard to distinguish right from wrong.

Who could judge what had lasted for thousands of years!

...

In Song Jue's small yard.

Song Jue was holding his elder brother. "Brother, you are recovered! Great! Great!"

After Song Sheng was fed with Ye Xiao's supreme dan bead, with the help of Han Bingxue's top-level Dao Origin Stage power, he was completely recovered after the time of a meal.

It was such a great news for Song Jue.

He had the supreme dan beads that were given to him by Ye Xiao all the time, but he didn't dare to use them. He didn't want to be targeted. However, there was nothing that could threaten him. Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were there to help. It was not a problem to cure Song Sheng in a short time!

[Brother is well now. He is even better than before. He has improved.]

[Song Xuan is cured too. He is also boosted in cultivation. There will be a great future for him.]

What had been bothering Song Jue since he returned was now gone.

Song Jue became energetic.

After he knew that man who was commanded like a lackey was Han Bingxue, Song Jue felt confused. [Since when did Xiao Xiao acquire such a capability?]

He looked at Xuan Bing, who was staying aside quietly, as if he didn't exist. He was more confused. [Who is this lady? Why does Han Bingxue, a super powerful cultivator, fear her? Why is she traveling with Ye Xiao?]

Song Jue apparently had a good impression of Xuan Bing. He walked to her and said, "Well, I mistook you for someone else. I am sorry. May I have your name, lady..."

Xuan Bing blandly said, "Xuan Bing."

"Hmm. Xuan Bing, what a good name. Xuan like a goddess... with beautiful bones like ice... What!!!" He couldn't stop praising her at the beginning, until he realized who she truly was. He exclaimed like a cat that was stepped on the tail.

He nearly jumped up to the ceiling.

...

Chapter 1004: Because of You

"Xuan... Xuan... Xuan..." Song Jue stared at Xuan Bing in shock. Brave as Song Jue was, he still turned pale all of a sudden.

Song Sheng nearly fell off the chair when he heard it. He had just recovered from a big disease.

The two brothers kept staring at Xuan Bing.

Xuan Bing nodded to confirm.

Song Jue directly sat down on the floor. He started to sweat on the forehead. He didn't forget that he had pointed at this lady and called her Ye Xiao's concubine...

That was such a humiliation to the great elder of Misty Cloud Palace!

[Luckily, Xuan Bing isn't mad at at. How generous!]

[Otherwise, I will be finished. Not only me, but the entire Song Clan is finished. Xiao Xiao and Han Bingxue might die with me too...]

Who was Xuan Bing!

One of the three most powerful cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm!

The great prime elder of Misty Cloud Palace!

There was a most terrifying title of hers. The first Lady Devil in the history of Qing-Yun Realm!

Xuan Bing!

This name was even more shocking than a thunderclap over the head.

It was much more stunning!

Song Clan had been working so hard to collect medicines for Misty Cloud Palace. They only needed cultivation resources in

return.

The most powerful person of Misty Cloud Palace was right there.

Song Jue, after being stunned for a while, finally spoke again, "Song Fei... was in such a bad luck... He was like being hit to death by the iron pie from the sky!"

He was lost in thoughts. He surely remembered that Song Fei insulted Xuan Bing and it led to his own death. Suddenly, he felt kind of respectful to Song Fei.

"Maybe he just... had enough of being alive."

"So he asked for death like that!"

The others didn't think he would say this after thinking for a long time, so they laughed.

Xuan Bing laughed too. She truly appreciated it. She had been full of anger and grudge in the chest, but then it was all gone after the laughter. It seemed Uncle Song, the man who used to make her laugh and care for her in the old days, was still there!

Song Xuan, another young man other than Ye Xiao, had been busy making tea for others, serving others. He looked nervous but excited.

Xuan Bing glanced at Song Xuan. She could see a great potential in him. She lightly said, "The young man has a good potential. This time, Han Bingxue has taken an advantage. He took the young man as his disciple... What a waste..."

Then she continued, "Misty Cloud Palace doesn't recruit males. However, I do have a martial art that fits him so well. In fact, I got that martial art by luck... well, yes, I took it by violence! This martial art doesn't suit women. I guess you can have it."

Song Jue and Song Sheng were both delighted.

The martial art Xuan Bing would take by violence must be great.

Song Sheng urged Song Sheng to kowtow to Xuan Bing.

Xuan Bing blandly smiled and casually took out a jade token. She hit Song Xuan's head with that token and her hand had operated a mystic power to unlock the token. After the time of a meal, the token suddenly became ashes and Song Xuan passed out at the same time.

People in the present were all experts in cultivation. Song Jue and Song Sheng might be still below Dao Origin Stage, but they understood that it was a way to impart martial art. Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue understood it more. They were sure the knowledge in the jade token had already entered Song Xuan's head.

No matter what level the martial art in the token was, Song Xuan must be quite talented to get it within the time of a meal. He might not be a super genius, but at least in the first league!

Xuan Bing casually said, "The kid turned out to be more talented than I expected. Everything went well. As long as he can keep working hard on cultivation, he will get to Dao Origin Stage soon." Then she stopped talking.

That was a simple comment, but what she said was stunning. She actually predicted that he could reach Dao Origin Stage. That was a great compliment!

Song Jue and Song Sheng both nodded. Song Jue sighed and said, "There is no way to express our gratitude. Lady Xuan Bing, the Song Clan won't forget this."

Xuan Bing said, "It has nothing to do with the Song Clan. I just wanted to do something for the young man. No need to thank me. I don't need it."

She seemed smiling coldly behind the silk mask. She blandly said, "Do not have any doubts on me. If Ye Xiao doesn't want to help you, I won't even think of doing anything for your sake, no matter how talented the young man is."

That was frank and a bit cold!

However, she pointed out the core of the whole thing.

She pointed out Ye Xiao to every credit.

What she had just said finally sounded like what people knew about Xuan Bing, that she was always distant to others. After talking, Xuan Bing felt that her burning cheeks with redness were calmed down.

[God damn it, Steward Song. He just wants to prove I am a concubine!]

[Humph! Doesn't he think he gets to do anything he wants just because he is nice to Bing'er? No way!]

However, Xuan Bing, Han Bingxue, and Ye Xiao all didn't know...

What they did this day had helped a supreme master cultivator in the Qing-Yun Realm a hundred years later!

Song Xuan!

After the supreme dan beads from Ye Xiao, and the martial art from Xuan Bing, also the thorough instruction from Han Bingxue, he had gotten to a path toward the prime of martial art with his own great talent.

After Ye Xiao and the others left Qing-Yun Realm, the Song Clan rose up in the realm. Song Xuan became invincible in the realm for hundreds of years.

He replaced Wu Fa.

This was a different story about the future.

Ye Xiao had stayed in the Song Clan for seven days. When he left, Song Jue unwillingly saw him off.

"Tell my brother I will go see him!"

"Tell him to take care!"

"Xiao Xiao, the martial world is full of dangers. Always be careful."

Song Jue kept nagging the same words like a woman. He didn't stop until they were already three hundred miles away.

"Xiao Xiao, I don't know what you have been through since you came to this world. Please, just be careful. Take care of yourself." He had to say it again.

He looked nervous and worried.

...

Chapter 1005: Xuan Bing's Worry

Song Jue repeated the same words for so many times. In the beginning, Han Bingxue even felt funny that a tough man was nagging like an old lady. In the end, he only felt touched in the heart.

Song Jue's true heart to Ye Xiao was obvious. Everybody could see it. There was nothing fake. It was all sincerity.

The three people had gone so far. When they looked back, they still saw Song Jue standing high and watching them...

When they were back on the route, Han Bingxue realized something strange.

Ye Xiao would get lost in thoughts from time to time.

Sometimes, when Xuan Bing didn't notice him, he would stare at Xuan Bing and kept thinking about something.

Han Bingxue didn't understand.

He was confused about Xuan Bing since the beginning. [You are such a powerful figure, a famous person. Why do you have to come with us?]

[Don't you have anything else to do?]

[When we said we were coming to Oracle District for some business, you said you did too. We have finished our business in the Song Clan now, yet why do you still follow us? Don't you need to take care of your own matters?]

[It feels like a pin on the back walking along with you...]

Now, he was also confused that Ye Xiao looked at Xuan Bing with a strange look.

[What is it?]

[Doesn't it seem to go wrong?]

He clearly noticed that when Ye Xiao was facing Xuan Bing, Ye Xiao didn't feel stressed at all.

That was even stranger.

[No matter how powerful you used to be when you were Xiao Monarch, you are not anymore. You are not Xiao Monarch now, you are just Ye Xiao. Besides, even when you were Xiao Monarch, you wouldn't be so fearless facing somebody like Xuan Bing, the Lady Devil in the realm?]

[There must be something...]

[Something I don't know yet!]

Han Bingxue was lost in confusion. Meanwhile, Ye Xiao was confused too.

[Why?]

[I am sure Xuan Bing never tried to suppress me with her spiritual power. That's for sure.]

[But she is still one of the most powerful figures in the world. Even though she wouldn't intentionally do it, she should still have a suppression power against everybody around her. Unless she tried to particularly remove the suppression for somebody. I shouldn't have been feeling so relaxed. Maybe I could feel relaxed physically, but never mentally.]

[After all, there is a world's strongest cultivator beside me.]

[No matter how strong my mind is, how natural and casual I am... I couldn't have ever ignored the invisible impact from her power.]

[It should influence me at some point. Unless I have been staying in it for too long so I am kind of immune to it!]

[Such suppression was unique. Each was different. I may get used to Han Bingxue's power after being with him for a long time, so I am quite relaxed with him, but it doesn't mean I get used to other's

strong power suppression!]

[Why do I feel so relaxed?]

[Am I used to Xuan Bing's natural power suppression? Because I used to stay with her for a long time?]

Then he started self-mockery. He was the only one who could be completely sure about whether he did or did not stay with Xuan Bing before this. He had never met Xuan Bing before, not to mention staying with her for a long time to get used to her power suppression!

Other than the suppression, he had a few other questions in the head too. [Why is she following us? There seems to be no explanation for it. Why didn't she get angry at me? Even when I offended her by accident, she didn't get mad at all. Is she truly that generous? I don't think so. Han Bingxue is with us all the time. He has just said something she doesn't like to hear, then he was tortured to a dead end. This is another point.]

[Besides, I clearly felt familiar when she sat beside me while we were going to have a meal in that village...]

[When she was facing Song Jue, her attitude... it was ambiguous...]

[Further more, she gave all the credits to me when talking about what she did for others... Why...]

[Weirdest thing is... when Song Jue said she was my concubine... that she was Bing'er, why didn't she get mad?]

[It should be a huge humiliation. Even if she killed Song Jue, I may not accept it and I probably will fight against her risking my life, but she wouldn't be wrong if she did it...]

[However, she just didn't care. She even talked to Song Jue with pleasure.]

Ye Xiao thought he might be the reason because he knew the

secret of planting the Regeneration Ink Lotus. However, what he felt was that when Xuan Bing talked to Song Jue, she was sincere. She didn't try to pretend to be happy. There were too many questions in his heart.

Suddenly, he had an idea that seemed quite absurd to him. [Could it be possible that Xuan Bing is Bing'er? If it is true, everything makes sense...] He believed it was absurd, but he just couldn't forget such conjecture afterwards. That was why when he looked at Xuan Bing, he looked weird.

Xuan Bing seemed calm like she didn't notice anything.

In fact, her heart was beating fast.

Every time when Ye Xiao glanced at her with a weird look, she felt like he could see through her heart.

Every time when she sensed the warmth of his body and looked at his face, she wanted to rush into his arms.

Such a feeling truly had made her feel helpless.

[Oh... The girl's mind is hard to repel...]

[However, even if I am going to rush over to him, I should get him down, not get into his arms!]

She realized that if Ye Xiao kept suspecting, she would definitely be exposed.]

Yet she didn't want to leave him so soon.

How could she just leave, after being apart to him for such a long time?

...

Chapter 1006: The Secret of Oracle District!

[Besides, it is full of danger ahead of Ye Xiao. Han Bingxue might be able to deal with most of them...]

[Hmm... I just have to stay with him. Otherwise, I wouldn't stop being worried...]

It was such a bad excuse she found for herself. Han Bingxue could definitely do more than just deal with most of the dangers. In fact, in this district, Han Bingxue could ignore all the possible dangers. Even Ye Xiao alone would barely encounter anything dangerous.

Ye Xiao was level seven of Dream Origin Stage. It was far more than enough to travel freely in this place.

Xuan Bing made a decision after all the thoughts...

...

Ye Xiao had kept the East-rising Purple Qi on operation all the time on the road. He was trying to sense the special spiritual qi in the air. He was enlightened at some point. This place was definitely not as simple as it showed. There must be something mystic behind the scene.

There was an obvious reason for such an idea. The spiritual qi in Oracle District was absorbable. It was just hard to catch because it was too energetic. It was complicated to digest the qi because it had to be conquered in some way. That was why it took much more hard works to absorb the energy.

If he could solve this problem, there would be much more spiritual qi for him to use than other places in the realm!

The spiritual qi in this place was of the best quality among all the other places he ever saw. If he could absorb the spiritual qi in this place without going through this complicated processes, he could get much better spiritual energy than most of the other places in this world!

It would be more powerful and useful.

That was why he had been trying to absorb the spiritual qi which was not easy to catch. However, what he had collected was merely better than nothing.

For example, if there were a hundred portions of spiritual qi somewhere else and Ye Xiao could absorb them all with one breath, and the spiritual qi from a further location would gather over to fill the gap he just had created... The same amount in the Oracle District was of higher quality, but he would fail to collect even one portion of it after a breath!

To collect it was not all. He would have to conquer the qi to digest it, make it a part of himself!

He started to try it since the night started to fall till it was late when the stars filled the dark sky, but he barely got anything. It was a waste of time.

In the moonlight, Xuan Bing walked to him and stayed about ten meters from him.

She had been staying ten meters away from him. They could hear each other so they could still talk, but Ye Xiao couldn't get close to her.

"Miss Xuan, I have a question... that you may know the answer." Ye Xiao thought for a while and frowned.

"That's weird. I have a question for you too," Xuan Bing said.

"Urh? Well, then please ask first!" Ye Xiao was surprised and he decided to listen to her first.

"Maybe it is better to let you ask first. There is a long time ahead. We don't need to be like this."

Xuan Bing stood under the moonlight, wearing all black, like a ghost in the moonlight.

"You are generous. I think I will just cut the chitchat. I remember

that you have mentioned this once before. You said the energetic spiritual qi made the medicines better than many places. Is that correct?"

Ye Xiao was pondering about it.

"It is." Xuan Bing said, "I don't know why, but the medicines in this place are with ten times efficacy than those from other places. Some are even better."

"For example, the spiritual ginseng that is only a hundred years old is equally effective than those a thousand years old ginseng from other places. The Regeneration Ink Lotus in this place, which Misty Cloud Palace needs the most, is as good as Regeneration Jade Lotus."

She blandly said, "It stays like this since the ancient time. It is shocking, but nobody gets to know the reason for it."

"Nobody? I don't think so. I guess the main reason is the special spiritual qi," Ye Xiao said.

"Of course. Many people have considered the spiritual qi." Xuan Bing said, "But even so, nobody truly understands the secret behind this strange spiritual qi."

Ye Xiao nodded and was lost in thoughts.

"There was a time when many people believed there was some extremely valuable treasure in this place that caused the mystical spiritual qi. Countless superior cultivators came to this place and searched every bit of this district, but failed to find anything."

"They not only wasted time here searching for years, but also lost the spiritual qi inside themselves because of the long stay in this special area. It only lasted for a few hundred years before everybody gave up on it."

"Occasionally, some people would come again trying to figure out the truth. Most of them just found some valuable stuff and then left. After all, it was too risky to stay here for a long time. If

anything went wrong, they might be weakened in cultivation or completely lose their future in the martial world."

She slowly spoke.

Ye Xiao's expression changed.

What Xuan Bing said was exactly his conjecture. However, he didn't know that there were people who had realized it thousands of years before him. Many people had done it already. There were always wise people at any time.

The strange situation about the qi of this place had such a huge impact on cultivators. It could damage their cultivations, also ruin their martial world future. That was horrible!

"To be honest, I have the same thought." Ye Xiao didn't hide it. "There is a balance for everything in the world. The spiritual qi could never become like this for nothing. There must be something behind this."

Xuan Bing blandly said, "There must be. But nobody found it. However, if you spend all your life in finding it, you may waste your life and find nothing. Are you sure you are better and smarter than everybody in the history?"

She was warning him that he might end up finding nothing. What he is planning might get him nothing at the end. Those were such sincere words.

Ye Xiao seriously said, "Thanks. I appreciate it."

Xuan Bing nodded and stared at his face. She spoke in a low voice, "I have answered your question. Now, please answer mine, Brother Ye."

...

Chapter 1007: Suspicion

Ye Xiao seriously spoke, "Lady, please. I will tell everything I know."

He promised such, so Xuan Bing was about to ask the question. However, she thought deeper and only found that she didn't truly figure out how to say it out.

That question that had been hidden inside her heart for a long time was just hanging there. She had this question since she got her memory back, however, it was just roughly a feeling rather than an actual question. She didn't really have a specific question.

However, when Han Bingxue showed up, the question was becoming clearer.

"Here is the question..." She thought for a while about how to say it and then she said, "I know where you come from. You are from the Land of Han-Yang, the monarch of Ling-Bao Hall. Your name is not Ye Jun. You are Ye Xiao. You are the son of Ye Nantian the Great Northern General of the Kingdom of Chen. Am I correct?"

When she said so, her heart was beating fast.

"Yes." Ye Xiao looked calmed. "However, since you have put it frankly, I have one more question. How did you get my information? Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu know about me, but not much. Please, could you give me an answer."

Xuan Bing said, "There are more than only two ladies in the Misty Cloud Palace. They are not the only two who know about you."

When she said it, she blushed.

She was telling the truth. However, she didn't tell him that the two ladies didn't tell her anything about Ye Xiao.

"I see what you mean." Ye Xiao was a bit disappointed. [So she

isn't Bing'er?]

"Speaking of your name, it reminds me of an old friend." Xuan Bing said, "Ye Xiao."

Ye Xiao was surprised. He hurriedly answered, "I am right here."

He knew she was going to talk about Xiao Monarch, so he hurriedly answered it in order to interrupt.

Xuan Bing gritted her teeth and said, "Are you the Ye Xiao, the young Lord Ye or the other Ye Xiao, Xiao Monarch?"

Ye Xiao said, "I don't get it. I have heard about a great cultivator who had the same name with me in the Qing-Yun Realm, but he died a long time ago. When he died, I was in the Land of Han-Yang. I have no connection to him. The only thing that we shared is our name."

Xuan Bing blandly said, "Is it true? Ye Xiao was suffering from a deadly disease when he was a boy. His background seems to be a secret. He was a stupid foppish young lord, who bullied around when he was young..." She started to narrate Ye Xiao's life.

"He was poisoned once. When he was awakened and cured, his personality totally changed. He became a genius who was good at both martial arts and literature. He had lots of friends and became an enemy to the House of Chaotic Storms. He improved greatly fast in cultivation. When he was young, he already ascended to the upper realm."

Xuan Bing asked, "May I ask, do you think that it is supposed to be what his life should be?"

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "The return of a prodigal son is always laudable. Can't I be a prodigal son? Why not?"

Xuan Bing blandly said, "I just feel it unbelievable. It is too much a change. How is that believable?"

Ye Xiao said, "You worry too much."

Xuan Bing frowned and said, "You said I worry too much. Maybe I do. However, I just feel so sad that my old friend Ye Xiao passed away when he was so young."

Ye Xiao said, "Old friend?"

He pretended to be interrogative.

He knew the truth was he absolutely didn't know this lady in his previous life. He hadn't even met her. She was lying about the "old friend".

[She said I was her old friend. Is she trying to deceive?]

Xuan Bing's eyes lit up. She said, "He is dead for long. It is meaningless to keep talking about him. I worry too much. Forgive me, young Brother Ye."

Then she didn't talk about it again.

Ye Xiao was confused. [Why did she believe me so easily? Is she going to play some other tricks?]

[I just slightly denied it and she actually gave up.]

Xuan Bing stopped talking. She went straight back to her tent.

Ye Xiao faced the stars in the sky alone. Suddenly, he was in confusion.

[What is this?]

[What is going on?]

However, he didn't just waste his time staying there. He never stopped absorbing the spiritual qi. The night just passed in the silence.

He was trying it in a different way than before. He was trying to find a location where he could absorb the spiritual qi faster than other places.

He had failed many times. Xuan Bing had warned him, but she didn't believe there was spiritual qi that couldn't be absorbed.

The cold wind at dawn was blowing over. He felt a bit chilled. When he was about to stand up, he decided to sit still and keep his head, his palms, and soles up facing the sky.

At this moment, he accidentally sensed an enormous purple qi erupting from the east before the sun came out!

The purple qi was like pouring down from a huge hole in the sky.

The entire Oracle District was filled by the purple qi!

Ye Xiao kept absorbing the endless purple qi like he was utterly thirsty. He could clearly feel that the purple qi from the east in this morning was much more enormous than those in any other morning.

What made it special was that the purple qi seemed to have a destination this time. It kept pouring over to the Oracle District.

If there were ten portions of purple qi in the world, at this moment, there were ninety percent filling the Oracle District!

Ye Xiao kept absorbing the purple qi and he could clearly feel the purple qi growing in his dantian. He was just enjoying it, but then he found the purple qi became difficult to absorb.

It started to become difficult after one hour. At the first hour, he absorbed the spiritual qi like usual. He could absorb it as he wishes. After one hour, the purple qi became part of the air in this area. The spiritual qi in the air became utterly energetic.

He could never take in any spiritual qi anymore!

"What the hell is going on? This is supposed to be a great opportunity! Does it just disappear?" Ye Xiao stood up. He was quite upset, looking at the land under his feet.

The purple qi was not the problem. Otherwise, he wouldn't have the first one hour. The only problem was very possibly the land under his feet!

...

Chapter 1008: Mountain of All Medicines!

This land changed the spiritual qi.

When the purple qi entered this area, it was changed.

That was the only explanation.

However, even though he finally figured out the reason, there was nothing he could do! It drove him crazy!

In that early morning, the purple qi from the east was over a hundred times more than all the purple qi he had absorbed in his life!

However, it only left him one hour. That was all.

It became a part of the special spiritual qi in this area, like it was some living thing that wouldn't let anybody absorb it.

[This will happen again. No matter what, I have to stop this from happening. I will reveal the mystery of it!] Ye Xiao made up his mind.

Most importantly, he felt that if he solved this historic problem, he would be improved so greatly and became one of the most powerful figures in the world!

The seven days, they were on the road. Nothing special happened.

Every morning, Ye Xiao would feel a thump in his chest and stomp his feet feeling pity about the lost purple qi. Nothing else happened among them.

Even Han Bingxue, such a talker was silent.

That day, when they saw an enormous mountain, they stopped. They looked at the huge mountain and felt how tiny they were at the same time.

The mountain was much more majestic than any other

mountains they had ever seen!

The mountain range went from west to east, cutting the world into halves!

"It is Town of Ye on the other side of this mountain." Xuan Bing seemed perturbed. The big rain hat covered her face, and Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue didn't realize it.

"The mountain is known as the mountain with immortal medicines." Xuan Bing glanced at Han Bingxue's face and said, "Mountain of All Medicines!"

Han Bingxue's face twisted.

When he said he wanted to find medicines in this place, he was lying. He never thought that the truth was exactly like he said...

Xuan Bing was sneering at him. However, he could do nothing but accept it, no matter how mad he was inside his heart.

While Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue were having an unnoticeable quarrel, Ye Xiao was lost in his own thoughts. He could clearly feel the spiritual qi being denser in the air. When he tried to capture the qi, it actually moved away as if it was alive!

The air around him became empty. All spiritual qi had moved away.

The spiritual qi in this place was definitely impossible to absorb.

He looked at the mountain range up in the clouds. He had a feeling... [The secret about this land must be inside this mountain.]

"Do not underestimate this mountain. Even I can only get to the middle of the mountain." Xuan Bing looked at the mountain and sighed.

"What? You can't get up to the top? Even you?"

Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao were both shocked.

If Xuan Bing could only get to the middle of the mountain, this

mountain must be incredibly powerful.

"Don't doubt it. When you get to the middle of the mountain, you will face the scorching heat in your heart. There will be fire burning, thunder striking, wind blowing..." Xuan Bing blandly said, "Besides, there are spiritual beasts. All are beyond level nine. They are tough. As you go higher, the beasts you will see are in a higher level. When you get to the middle of the mountain, you will see the beasts which are as powerful as level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators. Not only one or two. They always gathered together as a group..."

"They are everywhere!"

She looked at the fog in the clouds and said, "Wu Fa once tried to get up to the top. He encountered a bunch of Heaven Swallowing Tigers. It was such a big fight. He was badly injured but he was cured afterwards. However, he never came to this place ever after."

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue both felt their faces were twisting.

[Wu Fa?]

[The well known most powerful cultivator in the realm actually failed to get to the top of the mountain? He was actually badly injured?]

"Then how will we climb over the mountain?" Han Bingxue asked.

"There is a ravine at the foot of the mountain. We can go there. The two sides of the ravine close up on the top." Xuan Bing said, "As it is recorded in the ancient book, it is a fissure that showed up under the mountain range in the ancient time. There is indeed always a way."

"However, the ravine is the only way that connects both sides. There is no other."

The three of them went closer to the ravine. Ye Xiao finally got to see the ravine she was talking about.

It was a ravine, as it was shown. The widest part of it was only three hundred meters wide. As it went up, it became narrower. When it went to about three hundred meters in height, the two sides closed up. It was a triangle tunnel, making a way to link through the mountain.

"Tut, tut. The ravine looks like something upside down. What a wonderful creation of nature. This is impressive." Han Bingxue couldn't stop praising it.

It was Ye Xiao's first time in his two lives to be here. He was obsessed. "It is incredible indeed. Bingxue, do you see it? The rocks are tilting on one side, and the rock on the opposite side are tilting too. The two sides are tilting towards each other. It seemed the two cliffs fell to each other one day at the same time and started to support each other. Day after day, it became like this."

Xuan Bing didn't put it in the heart when she heard what Ye Xiao said. However, suddenly she was enlightened and shocked. She looked at the ravine and realized that it was true. There were two cliffs falling to each other. That was why the rocks were all tilting.

It was exactly like what Ye Xiao said. The two mountains fell to each other at the same time and supported each other in the end so that they didn't fall.

Xuan Bing had come to this place many times, unlike Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue. However, she had never come up with such an idea. She just directly went through the ravine. Not that she was a careless person. It was such a strange scene. Ye Xiao had spent much time with Zuo Wuji so he learned how to see things in different aspects. That was why he could notice it. What he said exactly enlightened Xuan Bing.

If Ye Xiao was right, that the two mountains fell to each other and created a ravine, what kind of power could make it happen?

...

Chapter 1009: Lots of Weirdos

First, there must be some kind of power that was strong enough to slant the mountains. That was easy. Xuan Bing herself could do it. It wasn't actually a difficult thing for her. In fact, even Han Bingxue could do it if he tried hard enough.

However, that was the first step!

The next step was the real challenge. The two mountains had to be slanted at the same time. It wasn't difficult for Xuan Bing either. She just needed to work a bit harder. However, the two mountains had to lean on each other perfectly.

That was the most difficult one, but Xuan Bing still could do it.

The real problem was that the two mountains had to prevent collapse. Neither of the mountains could collapse during the process and the countless days after it was finished!

That was the real problem!

Xuan Bing thought for a while and came up with an uncertain possibility. If she did it, first of all, the mountains must be really strong. Second, when she made the mountains fall, it had to be accurate and punctual. That was the only way to keep the mountains from collapsing. That was the only way to keep the ravine existing for countless years!

It seemed to be a doable plan. However, she had a problem. She could think of such a way, but she was not able to accomplish it. It required overwhelming power, fast speed, and perfect precision. It wouldn't work without any of these.

Xuan Bing reckoned that she wasn't able to do it, even after she was free from the divine punishment. Not only she couldn't do it, but also Wu Fa, who was known as the most powerful cultivator in the world. They were two of the most powerful cultivators in the world after all. Wu Fa was better than her in cultivation

foundation, but not in other aspects. Besides, Xuan Bing might be even stronger than Wu Fa since she had removed the divine punishment on her. She used to be one of the best before she was greatly improved. Now, she might be even more powerful than Wu Fa!

All in all, Xuan Bing had a conclusion. What Ye Xiao said was possible, but nobody in Qing-Yun Realm could do it!

"This is Mountain of All Medicines. It is known as the mountain of spirit beasts and medicines." Han Bingxue sighed. It reminded Xuan Bing something else—this mountain was impossible to destroy.

She was enlightened. [This mountain has a mysterious power. Nobody could do any harm to this mountain, not even a piece of rock on the mountain. One who wanted to pick up a stone had to use one hundred times of their strength.]

The weirdest thing was that when the stone was taken away from the mountain, one would find out that it was the same weight as the normal stones.

They looked up at the same time, observing the ravine closely. They looked at the rocks pushing each other. They wanted to find traces that proved what the mountains were like before they fell down and made the ravine. As they spent more time looking at it, they realized what Ye Xiao said was exactly what had happened in the old time. They were terrified.

Han Bingxue was astonished. Xuan Bing was surprised. She figured she still had a lot to improve in the future. Ye Xiao was actually the only one who was calm. Not that he thought he was able to do such a great thing, in fact, not only at the present, even when he was still Xiao Monarch, he still couldn't. He used to be a little better than Han Bingxue and that was all. He couldn't defend himself more than two moves if he had to fight against Xuan Bing.

Actually, because they were in different cultivation levels, they

had different knowledge about things.

Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue were two of the most powerful figures in the realm. Xuan Bing was a super powerful figure. However, she was only a super powerful figure in this realm. Ye Xiao had experienced the strength of the cultivators in Human Realm Upon Heavens and also the power of the most powerful people in Qing-Yun Realm's history. He was much more experienced than Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue!

He was sure even the ancient masters of Qing-Yun Realm were unable to do this. However, those in Human Realm Upon Heavens could definitely do it!

It seemed a powerful figure once came to this place from Human Realm Upon Heavens!

When the three of them were looking up at the top of the ravine, a voice sounded in an erupting way.

"Ha. Look at the three fools..."

The three of them felt awkward at the same time.

They were all looking up at the rocks on the top of the ravine... showing the same posture... not moving for a long time... Even though they didn't want to admit it, they were actually just like three fools...

However, the truth was not as it looked like!

It was something so important that it concerned their lives!

"The three people there... Hahahaha... They are stunned looking at the rocks..."

Another voice sounded.

Ye Xiao, Xuan Bing, and Han Bingxue looked to where the voice sounded from. On the mountain beside the ravine, three men were standing in a small path on the hillside staring at them like looking at a new land. They were walking over with excitement on their

faces.

Ye Xiao understood what they felt. After all, it wasn't a usual thing to see three fools at the same time in this place.

However, even though he understood it, it didn't mean he forgave it!

They were mocking Ye Xiao, Xuan Bing, and Han Bingxue!

The three men were young. They all wore shorts. They looked energetic, spirited, and casual. They must be people from some big clan. The three of them were carrying a big basket on each of their backs like Song Xuan did. They were on the mountain for the medicines. They were collecting medicined for their clan so that their clan could exchange for cultivation resources.

When they saw Ye Xiao, Han Bingxue, and Xuan Bing turn their heads at the same time and shifted their gaze, they laughed even louder. They were still like three fools, but just staring at the three young men this time.

Miseries and pleasures were all destined. Those who had extreme joy would get sorrow at the end!

When the three young men got closer, Xuan Bing couldn't bear it.

Every time when Xuan Bing relived this experience with Ye Xiao in her dream, she would feel angry, even if she had felt delighted before the dream. After all, the experience was full of weirdos that were more than all the weirdos she had ever seen in her life. She met every strange person during the time she spent with Ye Xiao in this place.

Some sneered at her, some dally to her, some called her a concubine, some called her ugly, and some even called her a wild woman...

Xuan Bing realized that... there were so many weirdos in the world. There were so many unfair things in the world. Some people bullied others all the time. Some were just always waiting

to be bullied.

If one was not powerful enough, he or she might have to just bear the pain in the life, or just die very soon.

In other words, people without power didn't even have the rights to live with dignity. They could only exchange their lives for dignity. Even though they decided to make the exchange, they only had one instant to have dignity!

The world was always unfair!

...

Chapter 1010: Eldritch Youngsters

Xuan Bing grew up in Misty Cloud Palace. The toughest time for her would be the time when she was abandoned while she was just a child. Since she reached Dream Origin Stage and got in the martial world, she had always been decisive. Her cultivation rocketed greatly. In the end, she became one of the great master cultivators.

Since she succeeded in martial arts, she had never encountered any misfortunes.

Nobody bullied her. When she traveled the martial world, she always came and left fast and left no traces. She had never come down to see what the normal life was like.

There might be one hardship that she had been through. It was the fight against Xue Danru in the Land of Han-Yang. However, she won that fight. What she unluckily encountered actually brought her a special experience. She never felt regret. She even valued that experience. Besides, she got her illness removed and became even more powerful afterwards!

What she was getting through during this trip brought her different feelings. It was such a new and peculiar experience for a powerful figure who always stayed high in the world.

"Who are you?" Ye Xiao asked the three young men before Xuan Bing did.

It was a clear situation. He could clearly feel the anger rising on Xuan Bing. If she got to reach the three young men first, things would become rather nasty.

If the three young men had to face Xuan Bing directly, there wouldn't be any easy way for them to end this situation. That was why even though Ye Xiao was also annoyed, he still started to talk before Xuan Bing did anything. In fact, he might have saved the

three young men's lives!

"This is Sky Treasure Mountain. The other side of this mountain is the Town of Ye. Who do you think we are?" One of the three young men put his hands behind the back and blandly said, "In the Town of Ye, there is a Ye Clan. In Ye Clan, there are three branches. The third branch has three young lords. Among the three young lords, there is a young lord who is the second eldest. People call him Second Young Lord Ye."

Although he was young and looked a bit childish, he tried so hard to talk like an adult and an experienced person. He pretentiously said, "The Second Young Lord Ye's name is Ye Liangchen."

Then he smiled. "I am exactly Liangchen of Ye Clan."

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue both had twisted expressions.

Ye Xiao showed a weird face and looked at Han Bingxue. That was obvious. [I thought you are the most pretentious man in the world. I thought nobody could defeat you on this. It turns out there is a bloody mincing moron here. He may be even better than you at pretending. You must be careful, Brother.]

Han Bingxue knew Ye Xiao so well. He totally got what Ye Xiao meant only from Ye Xiao's eyes. That was why his face turned dark when he looked at Ye Xiao's eyes.

"Oh, the Second Young Lord Ye descends." Ye Xiao blandly smiled.

When he saw the three young men, no wonder he felt familiar. They were from the Ye Clan.

"I don't deserve that word." Ye Liangchen seemed trying to be humble. Raising his chin, he said, "May I, Linagchen of Ye Clan, ask where you guys are from? It is my favorite to make friends all around the world."

Han Bingxue said, as if he got a toothache, "The honorable Second Young Lord, may I ask if you always talk like this?"

Maybe he was a bit pissed by the look from Ye Xiao, so he actually talked quite respectfully. However, it was obviously sarcasm!

Even though it was obvious, he failed to express the right meaning. Ye Liangchen apparently didn't get it. He smiled blandly, looked at the mountain range far away, kept his hands behind the back, and let his cyan robe fluttering the air. His hair was waving in the air. He said, "In my eyes, it doesn't matter if the mountains are big or small, the water is clear or cloudy, people are noble or lowly, officials are influential or piddling. I, Liangchen of Ye Clan, treat everything with fairness. I talk as I am used to. I wonder why it concerns you?"

Ye Xiao felt that Ye Liangchen sounded really like a lunatic.

He talked and acted like he was playing on a stage, not in the real life.

Most terribly, he did it so well and left no flaws.

That was the new record of being pretentious!

"I should like to ask, where you are from and where you are heading for?" Ye Liangchen talked casually with a big smile, "If there is anything I can help, please do ask. Ye Clan is the landlord of this place. As a member of the Ye Clan, in the thousand miles land, I, Liangchen of Ye Clan, am more or less an influential person. Maybe there is something I can offer you my help."

It seemed humble, but in fact, it was utterly arrogant. Ye Xiao couldn't bear it anymore. He said, "No. We are good. I don't think we should bother you, the honorable Liangchen of Ye Clan."

Apparently, he shouldn't go on with it anymore. He was affected by the way Ye Liangchen talked!

The two other young men behind Ye Liangchen were showing a weird face. It seemed they were trying so hard not to laugh out loud.

One of them finally talked in a deep voice, "Ye Liangchen, are you

ill again? The three of them are just being in a daze. Why do you pretend in front of three fools? We should better get home soon. It won't bother me if you miss the dinner because of this, but I don't want to starve. When are you going to quit being pretentious in front of strangers?"

The tough young man who talked made Ye Xiao realize he was the one who talked impolitely about them at the beginning.

Ye Liangchen turned around and glared at his pal and blandly said, "Ye Meijing, we are sons of the same mother, but we have totally different personalities. I know what I am doing. I always do. Don't push me, or I will operate all forces around one thousand miles against you. You know how horrible it can be. Be honest with yourselves, can you handle it?"

The tough young man, Ye Meijing, didn't know whether he should laugh or not. "Fine. I forgot that nobody could talk to you in human language. Just tell me. Are you leaving with us or not?"

"I, Liangchen, have my own plan. I don't need your nagging guidance." Ye Liangchen spoke steadily, "We don't know where they are from and where they are going. This is the land of our clan. I certainly have to ask. What if they are spies? What if they are true friends? I don't want to regret!"

He smiled and looked at Ye Xiao. He looked casual. "Brother, do you agree?"

"Agree! Agree!" Ye Xiao nodded. He only felt awkward. "Agree so much."

He sighed in the heart and thought, [Eldritch youngsters indeed.]

...

Chapter 1011: People of the Ye Clan!

Ye Xiao thought Han Bingxue was the best at being pretentious, who could casually and instantly start being pretentious at any moment. However, he now realized there were always better people. Han Bingxue was much worse compared to Ye Liangchen. Ye Liangchen was the real master in being pretentious.

It was something that had fitted into his heart, his soul, and his bones. It was his instinct to pretend!

That was such a marvelous level of pretense!

Comparing to him, Han Bingxue was too much more obvious in pretense. That was a huge difference.

The third young man sighed and said, "Gosh. I mean, can we just focus on the serious stuff? Let's get the medicines back to the clan. I don't care about you making friends or you starving. If we don't get enough credits this month, we will regret it so badly. If we can't even get a spiritual stone, we will be surpassed by Ye Chengzong and his people next month. That will be truly hopeless."

Ye Liangchen smiled and said, "If that really happens, it will be just like your name means. Naihe, Which means there is nothing can be done to help. Hahaha."

He smiled and laughed at Ye Naihe, but he looked worried after all.

Apparently, he wasn't so sure about whether he could collect enough medicines.

Ye Xiao finally got to know their names. Ye Liangchen, Ye Meijing, and Ye Naihe!

[Liangchen, Meijing, Naihe!]

[Weird names!]

[Ye Naihe is fine. It isn't a good name for a boy, but it is not too bad. Lingchen and Meijing, come on! Are these boys' names? That can't be more ridiculous!]

[Besdies... the three names together makes a part of a line in a Chinese play from old days... Liangchen Meijing Naihe... Tian...!]
[1]

[I wonder if they have a brother who is named Tian?]

[What if they do...]

He didn't think Ye Xiao was a weird name anymore. If he was named Ye Tian, that would be embarrassing. Ye Tian was fine alone. What if he stood with those three...

He couldn't imagine it. He felt awkward.

Ye Clan people had truly weird names!

Suddenly, he felt curious about the clan he and his father were born.

Ye Naihe had pointed out the problematic situation, but Ye Liangchen seemed more interested in Ye Xiao, Han Bingxue, and Xuan Bing. He just started to talk to them. However, no matter how he pretended to be mature and experienced, no matter how he tried to talk decently, Ye Xiao, Han Bingxue, and Xuan Bing eventually got to know what he truly wanted.

He was trying to get support.

He was actually asking for help.

Maybe he was eagle-eyed, or maybe he wasn't. The three people he was asking for help could be a team that swept the entire Qing-Yun Realm. However, the way he asked for help were provoking the three. Anyone of the three could destroy the Ye Clan. That was right. Ye Xiao might not be powerful enough, but he could let Han Bingxue do it for him. That would be easy!

After the conversation, they finally understood. Ye Liangchen

didn't get to them because of what his eyes were like. He just couldn't get anybody else to ask anymore. He just asked whoever he could for support.

"I mean, come on. Ye Clan should be a big clan in the Town of Ye, right? You guys are definitely the young lords in the Ye Clan. How do you end up like this?" Ye Xiao looked at them and asked disdainfully.

That was a frank satire. Ye Meijing and Ye Naihe were both pissed. They were about to rage up.

Ye Xiao was such an experienced man. It was a piece of cake for him to make them angry.

However, Ye Liangchen's eyes lit up and he actually smiled. He said, "Brother, you are frank, but what you said is true. I feel so ashamed. However, the world has many better people. Ye Clan is indeed powerful. We do have lots of superior cultivators. However, we are still not like an overlord after all. It is a long story to tell."

When Xuan Bing heard him saying 'we are still not an overlord', she felt wordless.

Even Misty Cloud Palace, such a powerful organization, didn't dare to mention overlord to describe themselves.

Ye Xiao tried to be patient and continued the conversation. As expected, he easily got the information about Ye Clan's current situation.

"Ye Clan is the landlord house of this place. It certainly has many enemies. There are some matters I don't think I can tell any stranger. However, for the first sight, I saw you three like old friends. We are friends. We should be honest with our friends. I guess it doesn't matter if I tell you more about my clan."

The others rolled up their eyes when they heard Ye Liangchen.

[Look how hard you try to earn their trust! You have just spoken to them for a while and they became your old friends? Do you

know their names? Do you know where they are from? Where they are heading? How powerful are they? What background they have? You know nothing! Yet you actually see them as old friends? You actually want to complain about our clan to them?]

Ye Meijing and Ye Naihe couldn't agree what Ye Liangchen was about to do. However, they didn't stop him. They just stood aside and listened.

Ye Xiao felt that they truly had come to a dead end. They were trying to fetch any possible chances to save themselves!

That was too reckless and risky!

"There are six branches in the Ye Clan. However, the first branch, which used to be the main force of the Ye Clan, fell to the bottom because of a case in the old days. They quit after that case. All they have is the name, but no power anymore. The second and fourth branches are taking charge of the clan at the moment. The fifth branch is associated with the second branch. That makes them bigger in number of people. The sixth and fourth branches are associated, so as to fight against the second and fifth. The two groups have been fighting each other for a long time. They nearly used everything they can, no matter how vicious it was."

"The third branch used to be associated with the first. However, when the first branch fell, the third fell too. That was certain. The other four branches kept suppressing the third. The third branch is better than the first, but still in a quite dangerous situation."

"I, Ye Liangchen, am a member of the third branch."

...

Ye Xiao roughly understood most of the truth about the Ye Clan from Ye Liangchen's nagging description.

The first branch was apparently where his father belonged to. The case in the old days was the reason why the first branch would fall.

The other four branches had taken charge of the clan business and forces. They were suppressing the first and the third branches too hard.

...

—————

[1] Liangchen(良辰) Meijing(美景) Naihe(奈何) Tian(天), is a line in the play The Peony Pavilion that was written in Ming Dynasty

Chapter 1012: Eventful Clan

When people in the Ye Clan were busy on internal conflict, the Ye Clan encountered theft. The three biggest storehouses of Ye Clan were empty. Even mice would shed tears when they went to the storehouses.

Ye Clan's important materials were all in those three storehouses, including money, cultivation materials, valuable medicines, and some medical materials that they were going to exchange for cultivation resources.

What was more unfortunate was that the people on guard were three third branch members, Ye Liangchen's father and two of his uncles.

Their storehouses were emptied by thieves and the three men on guard didn't know anything about it. That was unforgivable.

They were locked by the superior cultivators in the clan and then the entire clan were out to look for the stolen materials.

However, everybody knew that it was just formalization. They would find nothing.

Whoever they were, they emptied the three storehouses of Ye Clan while there were three people on guard. The men on guard actually knew nothing about the theft. It was not easy to find the lost items back.

Ye Clan people were panicking.

If the stolen objects only belonged to the Ye Clan, it was fine. It was a big strike on the Ye Clan, but the Ye Clan was still a powerful clan. It only took time for them to recover. However, the worst thing was that they lost the materials that they should hand to Misty Cloud Palace. They had already given Misty Cloud Palace a list of the materials. In other words, Misty Cloud Palace was expecting the materials.

Ye Clan was waiting for the cultivation materials from Misty Cloud Palace. Besides, they promised to give Misty Cloud Palace the medical materials on that list...

That was such a joke!

In the Qing-Yun Realm, who dared to mess with the Misty Cloud Palace?

Even the most powerful cultivator, Wu Fa, had to show respect to the great elder of Misty Cloud Palace, let alone people in Ye Clan.

She might only need to puff to destroy the Ye Clan!

That was why the Ye Clan was totally freaked out.

This was much more troublesome to the Ye Clan than the case about Ye Nantian!

When the storehouses were stolen, they kicked out everybody of the third branch. They were all sent to the Mountain of All Medicines to collect medical materials. It was impossible to collect all they needed, but it was always better than nothing!

The Mountain of All Medicines was Heaven Treasure Mountain, as the local people called it.

Ye Liangchen and his two brothers had been staying on the mountain for half a month. The others had returned earlier after they had collected some medicines. The three young men figured it wouldn't make any difference if they went home, so they asked to stay longer. They were thinking maybe they could find any valuable materials by luck.

However, the mountain was not a place where youngsters could casually hang around. Heavens didn't bless them more. They had walked round and round the mountain but found nothing. That was why they decided to leave.

When they were leaving, they met Ye Xiao, Han Bingxue, and Xuan Bing.

The three young men were below Dream Origin Stage. They weren't even able to see Ye Xiao's cultivation level, not to mention Xuan Bing's and Han Bingxue's. However, they still had imagination. Ye Liangchen imagined that they had met three super powerful figures. [We can't be more miserable now. What if I make friends with a great figure by luck? They are all beyond the high level we can see. Maybe one of them is a super powerful cultivator!]

[If we can get the support from a super powerful cultivator, the situation... Hmm... At least the suppression on the third branch would be eased.]

He was obviously going to try anything as he was in a desperate situation.

He must have forgotten that it was Misty Cloud Palace the Ye Clan had offended. Who on earth in the Qing-Yun Realm dared to mess with Misty Cloud Palace and the Lady Devil of the realm?

Was there anybody?

Maybe there was. Like Xuan Bing herself?

"Even though we are in troubles from inside and outside, we never fear the heavy burden on the shoulder. I am Ye Liangchen." He took a deep breath and acted like he wasn't concerned at all. "I, Liangchen of Ye Clan, have faith to get through all the toughness!"

"There will be no splendid rainbow before a rainstorm. I, Ye Liangchen, will never forget my true heart!" He tightly held his fists and stared in distance, with steadiness on the face.

Deep in his eyes, the fear and nervousness had sold him out though. Otherwise, what he just said might make him a brave and fearless man who never gave up!

However, now he was just hilarious!

Ye Xiao smiled.

He didn't just feel hilarious. After all, he could feel that this young man was a righteous man, even though he was pretentious like hell.

The purity in his heart was something Ye Xiao valued!

[This kid seems to be... dreaming about being a hero. He is a bit obsessed in it... He only cares for his own family and his own clan.]

[At least, he is honest to say that he will never forget his true heart!]

[That is already valuable enough!]

"Ye Liangchen, look at you, smiling with joy. Did you find a Regeneration Ink Lotus?"

At this moment, a voice sounded from the top of the ravine. After a second, several figures got down to the floor. - Shoot! -

Ye Xiao was stunned.

Xuan Bing frowned and pulled Han Bingxue's sleeve a little. Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue stepped back a few steps, keeping away from Ye Xiao and the three young men. They both were looking at those men who just arrived.

At this moment, Xuan Bing realized the reason why she had been feeling wrong all the way along.

She and Han Bingxue, two powerful cultivators, had been staying with Ye Xiao. It certainly kept Ye Xiao safe, but also stopped Ye Xiao from improving!

If a man of the martial world was always protected by stronger persons and never experienced any hardships, how could he become one of the best cultivators?

To gain improvement from fights was the right way to become powerful. Flowers in the greenhouse would eventually die in the storms, no matter how rare they were!

That was why Xuan Bing chose to step away this time. She even

pulled Han Bingxue over. She wanted Ye Xiao to deal with the situation himself. Han Bingxue might be quite a pretentious man, but he was also smart and wise. Xuan Bing just showed him a hint, and he clearly understood what she meant.

...

Chapter 1013: Crisis on the Ye Clan

Han Bingxue kept yelling in the heart. [No Sister! You don't know! My boss doesn't need such practice... All he needs is time. He just needs time to accumulate!]

[Who do you think he is! Deep in his bones he is the famous Xiao Monarch! Besides, he is my boss! He doesn't need any tough-life experience at all!]

However, he would never say it out.

So he had to just step back with Xuan Bing.

He was sure that if he didn't step back as she wanted, if he didn't even step back as soon as she expected, she would knock him out. She would never talk much to him!

That was the image of Xuan Bing in Han Bingxue's heart. She would never talk much if she could solve a problem with an actual move! She just wouldn't waste a second!

Ye Xiao noticed it, but he didn't care. He was focused on the man who just talked.

It was a young man wearing purple clothes. Two middle-aged men were on his sides. They must be two of his guards. They looked quite vigorous. Ye Xiao operated his spiritual mind to check and found out that they were both level three of Dream Origin Stage.

He was shocked.

It was quite normal that some level three Dream Origin Stage cultivators became guards outside Oracle District. However, this was Oracle District. That young man had two guards at level three of Dream Origin Stage. It meant he must be powerful.

The purple-clothed young man were looking at Ye Liangchen and his brothers. He was smiling and gloating.

"What does it matter if I did or did not? What will you do?" Ye Liangchen changed the expression on his face and then started to talk arrogantly, "Li Qingzhou, don't talk like you have the right to gloat. What? Did you... get it?"

The purple-clothed young man, Li Qingzhou, laughed and sneered, "Does it matter if I should gloat or not? What's important is whether you have found Regeneration Ink Lotus. Isn't it? However, I was right. Your Ye Clan is going to be so f*cked up. We, Li Clan, are going to take over the order from Misty Cloud Palace! We will take it alone! Ye Liangchen, next time when you see me, call me boss. Don't forget!"

Ye Liangchen looked pale. He spoke seriously, "Stop that dream! We will never lose the deal!"

"Dream? Are we the ones who are dreaming? Look at you. Ye Clan has nothing. Don't you think I know it?"

Li Qingzhou laughed. "When you took the order from Misty Cloud Palace, you promised them fifty Regeneration Ink Lotus. Let's just ignore other materials. Let me ask you. Where are the Regeneration Ink Lotus? Can the Ye Clan really make it up in time? Not to mention fifty, I bet you can't even give them five!"

Ye Liangchen was angry with redness on the face. He said, "You... How did you know?"

After all, he was too young. The biggest weak point of his clan was exposed. He couldn't stay calm anymore. What he did was just asking for answers.

"Hahaha. It really isn't confidential anymore. Does it matter if I know it or not?" Li Qingzhou laughed, "Let's forget about how you lost those materials. The reality is that you fooled Misty Cloud Palace. I wonder what the Ye Clan can do to solve this problem!"

He laughed wildly and said, "What kind of a great sect do you think Misty Cloud Palace is? Qiong-Hua Moon Palace can never

compare now! Back in the years, Qiong-Hua Moon Palace had made your clan fall to collapse. Now, the history is reliving again. No. This is not just a reliving of history. You fooled Misty Cloud Palace. That means you fooled the great elder Xuan Bing. That Lady Devil. She would probably wipe out the entire district because she is that kind of person who will always protect her own people even though it is wrong! Ye Clan is definitely going to be destroyed! Hahaha. Look at you, after holding Misty Cloud Palace's shoes for so many years, what did you get? You put your entire clan into death! Maybe the god does hold justice!"

"Hmm..." Han Bingxue swallowed. [What are these young generations of the clans in this district? Why is this young man so unlucky? Song Fei insulted Xuan Bing. This Li Qingzhou actually called her Lady Devil. What a brave man. What a lucky man. What an overwhelming fortune. It is just like a novel book!]

He could feel that Xuan Bing was... pissed again!

However, he was wrong about the reason. She didn't care about the name, Lady Devil. It wasn't new for her. She just didn't pay attention to that. She clearly knew that it was better to be feared than to be bullied! That was the rule in Qing-Yun Realm!

What annoyed her was that Li Qingzhou said that she would protect her own people even though it was wrong. [I have a bad temper. I know. Sometimes, I do things to protect my own people. That is normal. Everybody does. At the very least, even if I always protect my own people regardless of justice, do you have the right to judge?]

[You actually said that in front of Ye Xiao! You are ruining my good image! You talked like I am a sneaky person!]

Maybe she didn't notice, but the truth was that she cared about Ye Xiao more and more as Xuan Bing, not only as Bing'er. It concerned her whether he could get experience. She also didn't want Ye Xiao to think her as someone with a bad personality!

Xuan Bing's personality, also Ye Xiao, had great influence on Xuan Bing!

She apparently didn't notice it. Even if she did, she wouldn't admit it!

However, she thought too much about Li Qingzhou's words. Ye Xiao might be reasonable in most circumstances, however, he would only be reasonable to his own people. He would definitely protect his own people when it was against the outsiders!

He would definitely protect his own!

"Ye Liangchen, you are not that naive, are you? You don't think Misty Cloud Palace would just forgive you after that huge mistake you made, do you? If you are truly that naive, I can only sigh for you. There are not so many miracles in the world. Come on. Even if there are, it won't happen to you!

Li Qingzhou started to show viciousness on his face. "All that you Ye Clan owe us these years, we will claim it back little by little. You are going to give it out! When we take over the orders from Misty Cloud Palace, you will only be our servants!

"Ye Liangchen, when that day comes, I will definitely show you special kindness!"

He laughed viciously and said, "You, the four of you, Ye Liangchen, Ye Meijing, Ye Naihe, and Ye Tian... I will pay special attention to each of you carefully!"

Ye Xiao twisted his lips. [It turns out they are exactly... Liangchen, Meijing, Naihe, Tian? Ye Clan must be quite outstanding in giving their people weird names...]

...

Chapter 1014: I Have Been There

"To be honest, I always have a dream. I want you all to know that when you mess with me, Lord Qingzhou, you will eventually... beg for death!"

When he said the last few words, his voice came through his teeth. When he said it, he slowly moved forward. In the end, he shouted, "Understand?"

Killing intent erupted.

Ye Liangchen couldn't help but take a step backward.

No matter how steady and calm he was, he understood that his clan was truly going to the end. There was nothing he could do to change.

Li Clan was the sworn enemy to Ye Clan all the time, and also the biggest rival. The two clans were even in forces. Ye Clan might be a little bit stronger because of the connection with Misty Cloud Palace. The Li Clan had been searching for valuable materials and they even planted some of them. All they needed was the time when Ye Clan made a mistake and they could take over Ye Clan's deals with Misty Cloud Palace. They wanted to replace Ye Clan.

Ye Clan had been lucky for all those years. Every time, they could collect enough materials for Misty Cloud Palace. That left no chance to Li Clan. That was also why Misty Cloud Palace had been dealing with Ye Clan for such a long time and it made Ye Clan a little bit stronger than Li Clan!

However, the two clans both understood that it wasn't a certain thing. If Li Clan got lucky, Ye Clan would be replaced at any time.

That was why the two clans both didn't dare to be slack.

The young generations of the two clans were also competing with each other under the table. Li Qingzhou was the biggest enemy of the youngsters of Ye Clan. He was vicious and ruthless. If Li Clan

replaced Ye Clan this time, it would be a disaster for Ye Liangchen and his brothers!

There were many stories that were spreading that this young lord Li wasn't just talking. He had countless methods to torture people. If anybody fell in his hand, it would be difficult to even die easily. When he said he would make people beg for death, he wasn't lying. He definitely would do it. He wouldn't show mercy!

"I don't have it. So what? Do you have it?" Ye Liangchen said, "Did you collect many materials? Did you get inside the third layer of Heaven Treasure Mountain?"

"If you can't get inside the third layer, you can't get the medicine. Even if we don't have enough Regeneration Ink Lotus, you won't get to replace us!"

Ye Liangchen was apparently tough on the mouth.

"Nonsense! Nobody has ever entered the third layer of Heaven Treasure Mountain in history! We can't enter it, and it is reasonable!" Li Qingzhou squinted at Ye Liangchen and said, "Ye Liangchen, did you enter it today?"

"I..." Ye Liangchen didn't know how to reply.

On the other side.

Ye Xiao thought for a while and interrupted for the first time, "You, Li Clan, can't get in the third layer? And you are so sure that nobody else can? Who said that we Ye Clan can't enter it?"

Everybody else was shocked by what he said.

Not only Li Qingzhou, but also Ye Liangchen was shocked. They both looked at this handsome young man and couldn't believe what he had just said.

[What does he mean... 'we Ye Clan'?]

[Since when he becomes member of Ye Clan?]

"My name is also Ye." Ye Xiao rubbed the nose and spoke nicely,

"I am not from Town of Ye, but we have the same name. It makes me feel angry that these young men who are also named Ye are attacked."

He stopped and then continued, "All the people of the name Ye are like families. Nobody can insult it."

Ye Liangchen looked at him and spoke after a short silence, "Brother Ye, you are a loyal man!"

Ye Xiao rolled up his eyes.

[What the hell. I forgot this guy's stupid personality.]

[Loyal?]

[I am a loyal man? That's an abuse!]

[You are from Ye Clan. I am named Ye too. You are in the third branch, which was closely related to my father. You have been suppressed because of what happened in the old days. You are more or less my own people... If not for these reasons, I will never step out and be the loyal man in your eyes!]

Apparently, Ye Xiao was truly a person who would always protect his own people. Xuan Bing couldn't compare on this!

Li Qingzhou squinted at Ye Xiao and sneered, "You are named Ye? What a persuasive reason... I don't know which rotting corner do you come from. You are not allowed to talk. You must know that if you claim to be one of Ye Clan people, you are seeking death!"

Ye Xiao didn't get angry. He just smiled and said, "Seeking death? I am definitely not. However, it is true that I am Ye. Even if I want to change it, I can't. No matter where I am from, I am a Ye Clan people. I won't betray my ancestors!"

He looked at Li Qingzhou and asked, "Would you abandon your family name when your clan is in danger?"

Li Qingzhou looked fierce. "That's quibbling. I won't have this

quarrel. Let me ask you seriously. Do you really want to step in the Li Clan and Ye Clan's business? I think you don't know the truth!"

He half closed his eyes and continued, "You will die! Ye Clan people may live, but if you stepped out and claimed you are one of them... you will die! Ye Clan badly needs a scapegoat right now!"

Ye Xiao frowned. He could sense the murderous qi from the opponent, but it wasn't threatening for him at all. He blandly said, "Who can escape from death? All men die!"

"Nobody can choose when he or she would be born, but to die at the time he or she wanted to would be the most enjoyable thing in life."

"In fact, it doesn't matter if I will die or not. I just want to tell you that your Li Clan is not a big deal."

Ye Xiao half closed his eyes and said, "You can't even enter the third layer of this mountain. I don't believe you could make lots of Regeneration Ink Lotus. You don't deserve it."

Li Qingzhou was furious. He widely opened his eyes and looked at Ye Xiao. "How did you know there are Regeneration Ink Lotus in the third layer?"

Ye Xiao blandly said, "That's simple. I have been there!"

Li Qingzhou was shocked. He fell silent. His eyes were twinkling. He was thinking of something.

"You have been into it? Is it the truth?" He stared at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao didn't answer. He just blandly smiled and turned his hand over. In his hand, there was a black lotus.

...

Chapter 1015: Why Would It Change?

The lotus was all black, but glowing with mysterious and elegant lights. When it appeared, a light scent spread away. The wind was blowing strong, yet it didn't blow away the beautiful fragrance.

It just stayed in the air for a long time.

"Regeneration Ink Lotus!" Li Qingzhou and Ye Liangchen were both stunned when they looked at the lotus in Ye Xiao's hand.

They were both full of excitement and... greediness.

Money always touched one's heart. In fact, the lotus touched more at this moment!

Ye Liangchen was jealous and he wished he could have it from Ye Xiao. Li Qingzhou was vicious and ill-disposed!

In his eyes, there was intent to snatch the lotus and kill Ye Xiao!

That was a top quality Regeneration Ink Lotus. The leaves' petals were going to turn lighter. This lotus was already beyond the top quality. It was soon going to change into Regeneration Jade Lotus!

In other words, it was a super quality Regeneration Ink Lotus. It was precious enough to solve Ye Clan's crisis. However, if it belonged to Li Clan, it was also enough to completely destroy Ye Clan!

Li Qingzhou started to breathe heavily.

The two guards standing behind him were ready to start a fight for the lotus.

"Wait." Li Qingzhou stopped his guards. He looked at Ye Xiao and actually smiled. "I guess you did enter the third layer of Heaven Treasure Mountain. This lotus proves it well. I believe it."

Ye Liangchen stepped forward and wanted to talk. However, Li Qingzhou's two guards stopped him and started to operate their martial art to create qi suppression.

Ye Liangchen was below Dream Origin Stage. Under the suppression of two level three Dream Origin Stage cultivators, he couldn't even say a word out loud.

"You believed it? You just believed it?" Ye Xiao sneered and looked at Li Qingzhou, "Maybe I should say thank you for such a respectful reaction, shouldn't I?"

Li Qingzhou looked vicious. He said, "I should certainly respect you, as you have such a lotus in your hand. Besides, even though you are Ye, you are not the same as these people. What stays between you and me is merely a meaningless conflict. Am I right? We can just introduce ourselves again and make friends with each other. I don't think you will turn my sincerity down, will you, Brother Ye?"

Ye Xiao slowly nodded. "That's true. Making friends is my favorite, especially friends with kindness."

Li Qingzhou was spirited. "Li Clan will definitely show you our great kindness with respect. From now on, you are our honorable guest forever!"

Ye Xiao seemed smiling but he wasn't. "However, I never think kindness can only be expressed by words. What do I get if I become your honorable guest?"

Li Qingzhou smiled. "As long as you can give us enough Regeneration Ink Lotus, you will have whatever you want! In this district, Li Clan can assure you anything!"

Ye Xiao turned over his hand again to put that lotus away. He shook his head and looked upset. "Well, it is all about Regeneration Ink lotus, isn't it? I found a way in and collected a few of this lotus. After I left, I wanted to enter it again. However, I can't find the way. It was gone."

Li Qingzhou's eyes lit up. He said, "That is normal. Brother Ye, you are new to this place. What happened to you is the nature of

this mountain. There will be paths appearing but also disappearing after nine days. The way into the third layer will always disappear nine days after it appears."

Ye Xiao shrugged and said, "I see. I guess it is all decided by heavens. I think I can't help you with your Regeneration Ink Lotus. Even if I said yes, you shouldn't trust me, should you?"

Li Qingzhou half closed his eyes, which were filled with maliciousness. "That is not a problem. You are a stranger. It is reasonable that you don't know much about this mountain. We, Li Clan, has been living around this mountain for a thousand years. We know every path on this mountain. No matter where they go, we can always find them."

"In other words, as long as you can enter it, we will guide you on the path!" he spoke slowly.

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. "Are you sure? If you have a path that connects to the third layer, I can get into it. It isn't difficult to simply get inside!"

The two of them looked into each other's eyes and then laughed at the same time.

They were both having their secret plans in the heart. However, they wouldn't tell anybody else.

Ye Liangchen, whom Ye Xiao claimed association with, was totally ignored.

"Before we make the agreement, I have one thing to ask for. I have shown you the lotus as my sincerity. I think you should show your sincerity too," Ye Xiao said.

"Sure. Brother Ye, just tell me what do you want. There are few things that Li Clan can't do," Li Qingzhou said.

"I want a share of your medical materials! I will collect Regeneration Ink Lotus for you. You can have all the lotus. I won't take any. But I will take half of all the other materials." Ye Xiao

said, "If you don't agree, I guess we will have to quit the association."

He was being decisive.

"Absolutely!" Li Qingzhou was being straightforward. "That is exactly what we should do."

They laughed together again at the same time. It seemed to be a good cooperation.

...

On the other side, the three brothers who had been suppressed by the two superior cultivators only felt freaked out.

[This... Brother Ye... was on our side at the beginning... Why does he end up to be Li Clan's ally?]

[The world... changes too fast.]

It was not just fast. It was also cruel. It was truly more than cruel!

The three young brothers felt hopeless about such an outcome... They knew Ye Xiao could enter the third layer of that mountain... They knew he had some Regeneration Ink Lotus...

They thought Ye Xiao was their savior that would eventually bring a bright light to their future. They thought there was going to be a miracle that could bring their clan to life! However, the savior became another enemy. The bright light was gone. Hope became desperation.

Li Clan had such a powerful support. Ye Clan was going to end. Ye Clan was going to collapse soon!

The three brothers all felt despair.

[Are we going to end up Li Qingzhou's servants?]

...

When the three of them left that place, they still couldn't understand why things would end up like that.

Why would it change like that?

They didn't understand why the man who was also Ye changed his mind so fast. He said people who were named Ye were families after all. He should be a loyal person.

...

Chapter 1016: Different Intentions

Ye Liangchen walked far away and he could still hear the conversation between Ye Xiao and Li Qingzhou.

...

"When will we go there?"

"Well... the sooner the better."

"What about tomorrow?"

"Yes, tomorrow morning."

"Good! No problem!"

"Deal!"

"Deal!"

"Brother Ye, you can come to Li Clan and stay over in our place. We can go there together tomorrow. Isn't it better?"

"Don't bother. I don't really like the rules in big clans like you. Let me mind my own business. We will meet again here tomorrow morning."

"Urh... Brother Ye..."

"I am just being honest. I don't trust you. I am afraid I may never going to come out if I go sleep in your place. I will wait for you here tomorrow morning. And I will leave as soon as I finish collecting the materials. I will leave Oracle District. I know the local forces seldom go out!"

"Heh, heh. If you insist, I can only feel sorry. However, I understand your thought. Well then... I'll see you tomorrow."

"See you."

"Take care."

"You too."

Li Qingzhou and his men left with excitement.

Ye Xiao, Han Bingxue, and Xuan Bing were the only people who stayed.

...

Li Qingzhou had left.

He was about a thousand meter away from Ye Xiao and he couldn't see Ye Xiao even when he looked back. He looked vicious and ruthless again.

"My lord, are we going to let him take away half of our medicines tomorrow? The third layer of Heaven Treasure Mountain has been a mystical place since ancient times. There must be lots of materials in it. Wouldn't it be..." A guard spoke in a low voice.

"Hahahaha..." Li Qingzhou laughed out loud. He seemed delighted and spirited.

"I see." The guard stopped talking. It seemed he understood what his master meant.

"Hmm. Good. You are not so stupid after all. Tomorrow, when we finished collecting the materials, it will be the end of this story. Things are always unsatisfying for most people. We have to be the satisfied one! Tomorrow... when you do it... gather a few more good men just in case anything goes wrong."

"Yes, I will. However, those two people who stayed around the young man seem to be powerful. We can't see their capabilities. Is it..." the other guard said.

He was apparently more experienced. He wasn't blindly optimistic.

In fact, Ye Xiao had been hiding his own cultivation information. He made himself look like under Dream Origin Stage. That was a successful move. Li Qingzhou and his two guards all believed they had seen Ye Xiao's true cultivation level. However, Han Bingxue

and Xuan Bing were both too powerful to hide. No matter how they tried, they still had the aura around showing that they were two powerful cultivators.

That experienced guard didn't know exactly what level Han Bingxue and Xuan Bing were, he felt that they were both stronger than himself. That was also why they didn't fight Ye Xiao at the beginning!

Li Qingzhou understood that a bird in the hand was worth two in the bush. He also understood a man should always be prepared for danger in times of safety!

"I know. I will tell my father to arrange more superior cultivators to help. I will make sure everything goes well."

"Yes. You have a comprehensive thought. I am impressed."

"Hahaha..." Li Qingzhou laughed and said, "I didn't expect this. I just wanted to come out and take a walk, thinking that maybe I could collect some medicines in the mountain. It turns out I met a super valuable treasure. Ye Clan is doomed. Ye Clan will collapse."

"My lord, you are blessed. You are granted felicity!"

"Haha. That man who is also named Ye. He looked smart but in fact is a pig head. He actually wants to take half of our medicines? What a crazy man! He doesn't know the real value of that Regeneration Ink Lotus! If he contacts Misty Cloud Palace, he may have a really good deal with them! However, what he has will belong to me now!" Li Qingzhou laughed viciously and said, "Tell me, where can I find another dumbass like him? I wish I can have ten every day and I won't feel bored!"

"Hahahaha... That's true..."

"He is just an ignorant man. He doesn't know our power at all. If he can find the way by himself, maybe he has entered the third layer many times. He needs us to guide him on the right path. Well. We will guide him the path into the third layer and guide

him the path to the hell!"

"That's true, my lord."

"So... the heavens are giving this opportunity to Li Clan, also a great opportunity for me, Li Qingzhou!"

"As long as you get this done, you will be the most valuable member of the clan. You will be the heir! Please, my lord, when you become the heir, don't forget us."

"Sure. Work hard. I won't mistreat my own men!"

"Thank you, my lord! We will be ready to do everything we can!"

The three of them whipped the horses and soon disappeared at the end of the road with laughter.

In front of the ravine.

Xuan Bing looked at Ye Xiao with a complicated expression on the face.

"You are going to enter it," Xuan Bing asked helplessly.

"Yes. I can go up to the peak. This mountain is the key to the problem in the entire Oracle District." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Once I figured out the secret about this mountain, I will at the same time figure out the truth about the strange atmosphere in this place."

"No matter what, I need to get into it. I didn't know how to, but then those natives wanted to guide. I surely can't turn it down." Ye Xiao laughed.

"But it must be full of danger there." Xuan Bing warned him.

"That's why I need a guide. Natives know better." Ye Xiao smiled.

"That's a good move. It is so good because Ye Clan people are not the guide you want." Xuan Bing humphed. "If you encounter any danger, you won't need to worry because you can just sacrifice the Li Clan people. Am I right?"

"That's right. Lady Xuan Bing knows me well." Ye Xiao laughed.

"Boss, I have a few questions though." Han Bingxue rubbed his head and looked confused. He was asking for answers.

"Say it," Ye Xiao said. He and Xuan Bing were both looking at Han Bingxue as if they both knew what he was going ask.

"As far as I know, this is the first time you came to this mountain," Han Bingxue said.

"That's right. I have never come to this place before," Ye Xiao answered. He didn't need to hide the truth.

"How did you know the path is changing?" Han Bingxue frowned. He didn't understand. "This is my first question."

"You fool!" Ye Xiao and Xuan Bing scolded him at the same time. They said it together!

...

Chapter 1017: Blockhead

Han Bingxue defiantly shouted, "Why?"

"There is a compelling reason to call you a fool. If you look at the mountain carefully, you will find something too. You actually asked such a stupid question. It means you never carefully looked at the mountain." Ye Xiao disappointedly said, "The mountain is full of arrays. The grass, the trees, the rocks. Look at it carefully and you will find it is a Manifestation Mystic Array on the mountain!"

"We can see it is Manifestation Mystic Array, then we can definitely realize the roads on the mountain will keep changing!" Ye Xiao talked to Han Bingxue.

"Urh..." Han Bingxue looked embarrassed. He widely opened his eyes. Deep inside his heart, he knew Ye Xiao was right, however, he just didn't want to submit. He said, "I have never seen any Manifestation Mystic Array! It is reasonable that I didn't realize it... I don't think you can just disdain me because I didn't know about this special array!"

"Pah! You call yourself a level nine Dao Origin Stage master!" Ye Xiao said, "The only thing you know is swordplay practice. What about the rest of your life? Don't tell anybody you know me! That is embarrassing! That is shameful!" Xuan Bing agreed.

Han Bingxue was awkward. If anybody else in the Qing-Yun Realm talked to him like that, he would have drawn out the sword and started to fight, even if it was Wu Fa. However, facing Ye Xiao and Xuan Bing, he could only endure it.

"Fine! It is my fault. I am stupid. I am ignorant. Alright? I disgraced you two! Alright?" Han Bingxue looked upset. "Here is another question. How did you know they are in need of Regeneration Ink Lotus so badly? How did you figure that out? Regeneration Ink Lotus is one of the best medical materials in

Qing-Yun Realm, but there are plenty of other medical materials that have equal value!"

Ye Xiao looked at Han Bingxue like looking at a retard. "I... I truly don't know how to say this... I am wondering whether you are truly so dumb or you are just pretending... Did you hear them? They said they wanted medicines for Misty Cloud Palace. Don't you know what medicine Misty Cloud Palace needs the most?"

"What? How do I know!" Han Bingxue asked like a fool.

"All kinds of Regeneration Lotus!" Ye Xiao actually nearly laughed out. "What else do you have in your head except for all those stupid ideas about being pretentious?"

Xuan Bing nearly laughed out. She was such a decent lady, but the two brothers were having such a funny conversation.

"Regeneration Lotus? Is it that valuable to Misty Cloud Palace?" Han Bingxue was still confused.

"Brother Ye, you don't need to push him. We badly need Regeneration Lotus. It is a secret! It is reasonable that he doesn't know! I guess it is the heaven's arrangement that you got to know it!" Xuan Bing interrupted. She uncommonly spoke for Han Bingxue.

However, she was being honest this time. It was Misty Cloud Palace's biggest secret that they needed Regeneration Lotus to cure their disease caused by their own martial art. Ye Xiao knew about it because of Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu. His East-rising Purple Qi was very effective to ease the disease. He even unconsciously removed the disease from Xuan Bing. However, he didn't know all about the secret.

It was unreasonable for him to laugh at Han Bingxue about it. If even people like Han Bingxue knew about the secret, Misty Cloud Palace might be close to being ended!

Ye Xiao thought for a while and understood Xuan Bing. He

realized that he was being unceremonious. He and Xuan Bing knew the secret, but Han Bingxue didn't. Han Bingxue should have never known about it.

However, Ye Xiao wanted to save face. Even though he knew he was wrong, he wouldn't admit it! A boiled duck still had a tough mouth! That was him!

Han Bingxue was living in the rule 'boss is always right'. He didn't even think about whether Ye Xiao was right or not. He just went on to the third question. "Fine. I am ignorant about the lotus and stuff... How did you know that Li Clan knows the way in?" He wouldn't give up.

"If they don't, for thousands of years, Li Clan must have lived like a bunch of stupid dogs!" Ye Xiao was emotionless. "They collected valuable medical materials for the powerful sects and exchange for cultivation materials. Tell me... If you were one of them, would you know the way into a place full of treasures?"

He tried not to say anything offensive since he had wronged Han Bingxue in the last question. He knew Han Bingxue wouldn't mind if Ye Xiao did scold him again. However, Ye Xiao had conscience!

Han Bingxue finally realized what stupid questions he had been asking. He said, "Maybe they are just a bunch of blockheads... so they don't know the way..."

"You are the only blockhead in the world..." Ye Xiao spoke fiercely, "The others are not!"

Han Bingxue was a boiled duck too. It was a waste to speak nicely to him!

"Blockhead!" Xuan Bing spoke after Ye Xiao.

Han Bingxue was upset.

Xuan Bing laughed for a while and then said, "I don't understand one thing though. Why are you so sure that the key to the whole thing is on this mountain?"

Ye Xiao looked at Xuan Bing and couldn't believe it. "It is such an obvious thing... Han Bingxue is a fool so he didn't see it. You too?"

Han Bingxue was more upset. "Boss, can't you stop bringing me up? To what end will you keep striking me?"

"Obvious thing?" Xuan Bing was surprised. "Obvious how?"

She truly didn't understand. Unlike Ye Xiao, she had come to this mountain many times. However, she had never found anything special about this mountain. She never thought that this mountain was the key of the entire strange phenomenon of Oracle District.

The mountain was full of valuable medical materials. That was true. But... nobody could have thought that it had anything to do with the special phenomenon on Oracle District.

Ye Xiao was wordless. He said, "Elder Xuan... Every morning, when the sun comes out from the east, don't you feel the purple qi from the east?"

Xuan Bing was stunned, "Feel? Feel what?"

Ye Xiao sighed. "Everyday when the sun is rising from the east, there will be an enormous amount of purple qi descending to the land. That is exactly the spiritual qi a cultivator needs... In this district, the purple qi will vanish very quickly. Most of the spiritual qi will become part of the air and come to this mountain. Well... You actually don't know?"

...

Chapter 1018: Exclusive!

Xuan Bing was shocked. "Really? Is it true?"

Ye Xiao was shocked too. "What? Every morning there is a massive whirl of energy. You are such a powerful cultivator. How could you not know it?"

"I did feel something, but I thought it was because of the special phenomenon. I just didn't pay attention."

"That whirlwind blew to this Heaven Treasure Mountain with the purple qi. The qi in the air suddenly changed after that. Don't you know it?" Ye Xiao couldn't come up with one word.

[Such an obvious thing. Such a strong sign. Even Xuan Bing couldn't notice it? That doesn't make sense!]

"I really don't know." Xuan Bing shook her head. She truly had no idea.

"Gosh!" Ye Xiao made a sigh and didn't know what to say next.

Suddenly, he was enlightened. He realized something.

Every morning the purple qi rose up from the east. Maybe all the cultivators would use the energy to improve their cultivation. However, maybe it was difficult for them to notice the purple qi's movement route... Maybe he was the only person in the world who could see it?

After all, he just asked Xuan Bing about it. Even a super powerful figure like Xuan Bing couldn't see it. Not to mention others!

Maybe that led to a further conclusion... He could see what the others couldn't see... because he mastered East-rising Purple Qi. That was why all the people in the world couldn't sense the movement of the purple qi except him!

For the same reason, he could see through the mystery of this mountain, but others, even Xuan Bing, even the natives who had

been living in this place for centuries, couldn't!

Otherwise, there was no explanation for why nobody realized the secret of this mountain and the movements of purple qi.

Now he understood all of it.

He could see the source of the biggest secret of Oracle District.

He could see the mystery of the Mountain of All Medicines because of the martial art he mastered!

East-rising Purple Qi!

The first martial art from the beginning of history!

At this moment, he looked profound.

He turned around and looked at the mountain, which was full of mystery and weirdness.

With no reason, two lines of words showed up in his heart.

Peerless lord of the world and primal spirit in chaos!

It reminded him of Erhuo!

He then realized that Erhuo might have been sleeping for too long.

After they came down from that mountain and met Han Bingxue, Erhuo fell into sleep in the Boundless Space for a long time. It stayed asleep till this moment. It didn't seem to be awaking.

In fact, Ye Xiao wouldn't talk to Erhuo unless he wanted some dan beads. It seemed he had forgotten Erhuo for a long time. He felt regret. He seemed to be a lousy master!

Xuan Bing looked at Ye Xiao with a special look. She seemed in peace, but in fact, her heart was shaking.

[Ye Xiao.]

[Master. It turns out you are full of mysteries. I never knew it!]

[You actually saw the Manifestation Mystic Array at the first

sight!]

[It is such an ancient array art. There are just a few people in the entire Qing-Yun Realm who can recognize it. You actually noticed it. You found it out at the same time as I did.]

[Maybe you found out before I did!]

[With just a few talks, you got the chance to enter this mountain...]

[What do you want from this mountain?]

[And that Regeneration Ink Lotus of yours which is about to turn...]

[Do you know you would have gotten yourself killed by that lotus if I weren't Bing'er? If I were any other elder from Misty Cloud Palace!]

[It seems you don't care much about that Regeneration Lotus. I guess you still have plenty, don't you?]

[Maybe... you have prepared lots of the lotus we need, because of... Misty Cloud Palace?]

Xuan Bing's heart was rolling up and down with many questions, but she didn't ask any of them.

She didn't want to.

She wanted to trust Ye Xiao, not to question him.

[Master will do no harm to me.]

She didn't know that the lotus Ye Xiao took out to show the Li Clan people was actually... the worst among the lotuses in his Boundless Space.

It was true!

Since he got the Regeneration Ink Lotus the last time, he put it into the Boundless Space and let it grow freely. It created a lot of it as a return. In the Wood Space, he had three acres of farmland, on

which all the lotuses were planted!

Most of the lotuses were Regeneration Jade Lotus already!

Those were all life-saving medicines for the superior cultivators of Misty Cloud Palace.

...

That night, Ye Xiao sat cross-legged, intently absorbing the spiritual qi among sky and earth. He was still trying to conquer the spiritual qi in the air.

He didn't believe that the high-quality spiritual qi was impossible to absorb!

Han Bingxue was sitting on the other side. He was in meditation. He knew that Ye Xiao might encounter a fight the next day against Li Clan.

Such a fight would be just a piece of cake for Han Bingxue. He knew it, but he wasn't sure if Ye Xiao could be safe.

He had to be prepared in case anything went wrong!

In the dark.

Xuan Bing's black robe looked like a part of the darkness.

She seemed to melt into the air, but she was surely a real person with a physical body. Her eyes kept glancing over Ye Xiao from time to time, and then turned to other direction.

She didn't want Ye Xiao to notice her intention.

She was both confused and worried.

She believed Ye Xiao. She had faith in Ye Xiao. However, those questions kept rolling in her heart.

[Why?]

[Master, you have so many secrets.]

In Boundless Space.

Erhuo had been sleeping for over a month. Its fur became a little bit transparent from its snowy color. It appeared like every single hair of it was carved from jade stones. It was clean and flawless.

It was still sleeping, but one of its eyes suddenly moved. After that, it slowly opened its eyes.

...

Chapter 1019: Sleepless Night!

Erhuo woke up from a long sleep. It lazily stretched itself, reaching its paws ahead as far as it could. Its cute little body was stretched longer and longer. In the end, it fluttered its ears and stood up.

It looked at its own paws like it was trying to see something. Then it walked ahead a few steps in an elegant way. It shook its fur and curled up its back. Eventually, it became lazy again.

During the process, the almost transparent fur suddenly became white and smooth like snow again.

Its eyes were filled with a sense of blankness.

It never appeared in its eyes before.

The next moment, it stood up again and paced back and forth. It looked back and was surprised.

Not far away from it, the dozens of Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snake were more than one time bigger than earlier. They abruptly hissed to show allegiance.

They were all stretching their bodies, looking at Erhuo with fears in the eyes.

They were totally submitting to Erhuo!

They were more terrified because they clearly felt that their boss... had become more horrible than before after the long sleep.

Maybe Erhuo was a few times more powerful than before!

The snakes felt fear. It was the instinct of the snakes, the nature of them! It wouldn't be wrong!

However, how powerful was Erhuo if it was times more horrible than before?

Nobody knew yet!

In Xuan Bing's and Han Bingxue's eyes, Ye Xiao was just like usual. He was still concentrating on cultivation, trying to absorb and digest the spiritual qi in this place.

However, for Ye Xiao, it seemed to be a much longer night than before.

He didn't feel it annoying though. In fact, he felt it was great and interesting.

For him, it had been quite a long time since he looked forward to something the last time!

His face was calm. He just sat there with his legs crossed. Deep in his heart, he was delighted.

[A brand new day is coming!]

[I will get into the third layer of this mountain. I will reach down the bottom of this district and reveal the truth about its secret.]

He didn't think he could solve everything at the first time. However, it was an important day the next day!

...

It was a night full of excitement and expectation for Ye Xiao. It was also a sleepless night for Li Clan.

Li Qingzhou went back and reported something that caused a blast in the Li Clan.

When they were told that Ye Xiao had the Regeneration Ink Lotus that was nearly turning... When they confirmed what Li Qingzhou said was true...

"How could you just leave them there? What if he runs away? You pig head!"

The elder generation had scolded Li Qingzhou so badly because of this!

"What if Ye Clan people reached him tonight? What if they just

take him away or make a deal with him? Wouldn't it become a flash in the pan for us? Wouldn't we be falling down to the bottom soon? Only one lotus, but if we have the same quality as the lotus that young man has, it is enough to please Misty Cloud Palace. If Ye Clan have a few of that, Misty Cloud Palace may support Ye Clan to be the dominator of the entire Oracle District! It would be easy for Misty Cloud Palace!"

"Ye Clan is deep down in the bottom. They won't give up the last hope. For Ye Clan, that young man is not just a hope to save them, but also hope for a boost to the highest position in the district!"

"You bastard actually left him there... You actually came back and acted like you have achieved something great! You actually shamelessly asked for reward..."

After all the scolding and abuse to Li Qingzhou, Li Clan urgently had a leadership meeting.

"We have to make a full preparation for this. We can't allow any mistakes!"

Li Clan gathered almost all the elites in a short time to go to the mountain.

The elites were in two groups. One group spread away to guard all the roads Ye Clan could get on to Ye Xiao. The other group began a watch on Ye Xiao, Han Bingxue and Xuan Bing.

"Just make sure they are still there. Do not approach. Qingzhou's concern is reasonable too. We don't know their capability. If we get closer, maybe they will notice us. If they get to know how important the lotus is for us, they may raise the price. We don't want any accidents. Any delay or mistake could lead to an unaffordable loss..."

Li Clan had sent out hundreds of good men, nearly all the elites. Everybody was carefully on guard.

They were waiting for the dawn. When the sun came out, it was

time to move!

Everybody of the Li Clan stayed awake the whole night.

For Li Clan, Ye Xiao was like a savior who was sent by heavens.

Ye Clan was having a huge problem, but it was still not easy for the Li Clan to take over the connection with Misty Cloud Palace. For the recent few years, Misty Cloud Palace's need for Regeneration Ink Lotus had been growing. The lotuses all the clans in Oracle District collected were far less than Misty Cloud Palace needed!

Regeneration Ink Lotus was never easy to find.

It would be a great fortune to find just one from time to time.

They had to take great risks to get the lotuses. If they met the guardian beasts, it was ninety percent possible that the beasts would swallow them alive! That was not a joke!

For example, Li Clan could collect fifty of that lotuses in one year, but Misty Cloud Palace needed about ten thousand!

That was the truth!

Li Qingzhou was so certain that Li Clan could replace Ye Clan. He was bragging.

After all, even if Ye Clan failed to get even one lotus, it was only fifty short compared to the Li Clan.

For Misty Cloud Palace, it was a small number that didn't count.

However, the Regeneration Ink Lotus that Ye Xiao showed them was not the same thing. A Regeneration Ink Lotus that was about to turn into Regeneration Jade Lotus was equal to ten thousand normal Regeneration Ink Lotuses. A lotus like that was rare. One such lotus was equal to the amount that Misty Cloud Palace needed for one year!

...

Chapter 1020: Is It Him?

Besides, Ye Xiao said that he had more than one Regeneration Ink Lotus. He told them he had collected lots of it from the third layer of the mountain. Li Clan believed the lotuses Ye Xiao had were at least better than normal Regeneration Ink Lotus. In other words, whoever got the support from Ye Xiao would be valued by Misty Cloud Palace.

That was why Li Clan valued Ye Xiao so much that they would rather sacrifice everything to get him!

As long as things developed as they planned, to replace Ye Clan in the martial world would be the least they could gain. Li Clan could be greatly improved in power and become one of the most powerful clans in Oracle District. It was just a piece of cake for Misty Cloud Palace to help any clan achieves such a position!

"What a moron! He has talked to the man for a long time and even made a deal with him, yet he never asked for the man's name! What an idiot!"

Many of the elders in Li Clan scolded Li Qingzhou.

"Just get into the third layer first. As long as we get into it, that young man won't be able to get out. Everything on the mountain and everything he has in hand will be ours!"

"Do not alert him!"

...

On the other side.

After Ye Liangchen and his brothers returned to Ye Clan and reported what had happened, they were also scolded real badly.

"Useless! You idiots! You are a pretentious trash! That's what you are! He is such a blessing from heavens! You actually missed such a great opportunity! And it went to our biggest opponent's hand!"

"Ye Liangchen, you... the only thing you do is to make trouble for us..."

The swearing voice of the elders of Ye Clan resounded in Ye Liangchen's ears for a whole night.

"He was on our side at the beginning. He is Ye too. All who are named Ye are families. Maybe we are exactly the same family a few hundred years ago. What a blessing opportunity yet you let it slip away from your fingers. What were you thinking? Do you want Ye Clan to collapse? Like father like son..." The elder who said this nearly spat out blood. He was shaking.

"It would be better if you just missed the opportunity... but you handed it over to Li Clan... I... I... I am going to spit out a mouthful of blood..."

"It is not done yet. We may still have time to make a change... We just need to go over there... Their appointment is tomorrow... We still have the chance to change the result!"

"That's right! Send every good man we have! We must do everything we can to change the result!"

"Better do it soon!"

"Quick!"

"Urh... Well... What about the first branch and the third... Should they come with us?"

"You idiot! Have you lost your mind too? They come with us? Do you want to give them a chance to rise again?"

"Urh... You are right, Elder..."

Ye Clan also gathered a group of capable men to go toward Ye Xiao.

As expected, they encountered Li Clan's men on the way. Li Clan was waiting there to stop Ye Clan. They would never let them pass!

Li Clan had sent out every man they had for the fight. They

wouldn't step back a bit.

Ye Clan people would fight to win or die. They wouldn't let the last opportunity go away just like that...

That fight was so dramatic. It darkened the sky... Wait, the sky was dark because it was late at night...

...

It was a long night for Ye Xiao, for Li Clan, and also for Ye Clan. In fact, it happened to also be a long night for some other people in the realm...

For example...

Jun Yinglian was standing on top of a mountain, wearing all white clothes. Her eyes were full of amazement.

During the day, when she was running away fast after killing several disciples of the three factions, she glanced at a man... The man's appearance nearly made her lose manner!

The man was about a thousand meters away, so he didn't notice her. He was walking through the forest in a casual way. It seemed he was looking for somebody...

Jun Yinglian saw that man from more than a thousand meters away and nearly freaked out.

She didn't have a weak heart. That man just touched the softest part of her heart!

His shape and face looked too familiar for her!

Ye Xiao!

It was exactly Ye Xiao's body and face!

Jun Yinglian was stunned when he appeared in her sight. Then she staggered in dizziness and leaned on a tree with tears on her cheeks.

When she calmed down and wanted to find that man, he had

disappeared.

She could have found him if she insisted.

She had reached the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage. Her powerful spiritual mind could find him as long as he stayed inside a thousand miles away. It would be rather easy.

Besides, he was only a thousand meters away. It was just in a few seconds, the man could never go away too far!

However, she didn't get on searching right away.

She just kept thinking.

[Is it him?]

[Is it?]

[Was I having an illusion?]

[Was I in the dream again?]

She had been dreaming about him for so many times. She also had been disappointed too many times after the dreams. She didn't dare to try looking for that man because she didn't want to be disappointed again.

"He is dead. All the superior cultivators witnessed his death. His body was broken. His soul was gone. He is never going to return... How could he still be alive? How could he appear in my sight again!"

"People don't lie about his death. What was going on just now?"

"That man is weak in cultivation."

"Does he just look like Xiao?"

She stood there quietly in the wind. Her eyes were filled with grief.

"No matter what, I have to figure out the truth... I want to know... if that man is..." She flew up like a weightless feather and then disappeared in the darkness of the night.

She was approaching somewhere silently...

While she was flying, her face was suddenly covered by a black silk mask... Her clothes strangely became all black like the night all of a sudden...

Jun Yinglian had a longing deep inside her heart. She even didn't want to admit it.

That was...

[What if... Ye Xiao didn't die then? What if he just got seriously injured? What if he just hasn't recovered yet... Maybe he has been hiding to cure himself till now?]

[Wouldn't it...]

[Wouldn't it be...]

She obviously knew that it was absurd to have such a thought. However, when she thought of such a possibility, her heart started to bump fast.

...

Chapter 1021: Improve by Leaps and Bounds, Ning Biluo

It was the same night.

There were different people having a sleepless night in three different places for different reasons.

- Puff! -

Ning Biluo's clothes was tainted with blood. He stabbed his sword into a middle-aged man's throat in a precise and difficult angle. It took him just a few seconds to finish the series of movement. The middle-aged man was dead.

One sword took one life. He maintained his vigilance. He immediately dashed forward and fled away. Behind him, the crowd burst in exclamation. Before the exclamation stopped, several people rushed over to chase him like crazy.

"Kill him! Don't let him go!"

Ning Biluo was crazily fleeing. He had no time to rest. He didn't even have time to taste the joy out of the instant kill.

What led him to the current situation was something he did three months before this night. He killed a young man who was trying to rape a girl.

That young man wasn't powerful in cultivation. He was only level one of Dream Origin Stage, however, he had a strong background. He was the youngest son of the Prime Master of Sky Voyage Sect, which was one of the biggest sects in the world.

That was a surprise for Ning Biluo. However, what happened had happened. Regret wouldn't help. The only thing he could do was to try his best to survive!

In the three months after that, he was having quite a lot of fun living in chaos and misery. He had to face life and death crisis over

a dozen times a day for the three months.

Sky Voyage Sect must think quite highly of Ning Biluo. They never stopped sending out people to kill him. Ning Biluo had worked so hard and finally reached level one of Dream Origin Stage before he got into such a huge trouble. He was like half into hell!

The only thing that he felt comforted for during these days... was that he had been improving quite fast because he was being hunted and facing fatal dangers every day. He had to fight all the time without stopping.

To practice in real fights was definitely efficient. He was improving all his fighting skills. He even got lots of enlightenment after every life and death moment. He understood much deeper about the martial art he had been cultivating.

Now he realized how powerful the martial art was, even though it was given by Ye Xiao in a casual way!

As he cultivated longer, he understood more. He got to know how profound his sight could be with that infinite martial art.

He had escaped from death for many times. Eighty percent of the times he survived from death was due to a sudden enlightenment before death seized him.

He had experienced life and death challenges so frequently. It made him improve greatly by leaps on cultivation. As he was getting better in cultivation, he appreciated Ye Xiao more for what the latter had done for him.

His martial art was in top class even in the seven great sects. Ye Xiao had handed it over to him when they were in the Land of Han-Yang.

When everything went well, he might not get to know how precious the martial art was. However, after surviving from death for many times and the martial art always burst with great power,

he realized how valuable the martial art was.

In fact, what he was facing now was mostly because of Ye Xiao. Of course, he himself worked hard for it too.

Ye Xiao knew how valuable the martial art was. That was why he gave it to Ning Biluo.

He knew that it was perfect for Ning Biluo.

Most importantly, he didn't need such a martial art since he already had East-rising Purple Qi! For Ning Biluo, such a martial art was a great opportunity!

If Ning Biluo cultivated the martial art to the top level, he might enter the three supreme phases the three great elders of Cold Moon Palace had mentioned!

In fact, this martial art had an infinite potential supreme martial art!

The martial art, which was mainly about sword play art, required only 'fast, accurate, and concentrated'. The three simple requirements included the purest particularity of martial art in the world!

When he was in the Land of Han-Yang, he was already doing quite well in his martial art. When he stabbed his sword through Boundless Saint to avenge himself with blood, this martial art contributed a lot!

However, even though it seemed the requirements were quite simple, it was utterly difficult to get improvement. It depended on strong cultivation foundation too much. It didn't only require a strong foundation though. What it depended on the most was the cultivator's 'fast, accurate, and concentrated' capability. Almost all cultivators couldn't reach the standard. Whoever cultivated this martial art would always fail in making any great achievement!

Ning Biluo had a pure heart. He was naturally fit to this martial art. The three basic requirements were always from practice and

real fights. Ning Biluo was recognized as the world's best assassin in the Land of Han-Yang. He had a great score in daily practice as an assassin. However, he had one shortage, real fights!

How was it possible that a famous assassin lacked real fight experience? That was the truth. He always killed with one strike because he was an assassin. He would get away fast and quick after killing. That made it difficult to fight against somebody face to face. What he was cultivating now needed him to keep the balance between his own cultivation level and the martial art level. When his cultivation level was low, the shortage might not appear. When he was improved, if the martial art failed to catch up, it would be a failure. If he didn't correct it soon, when he reached Dao Origin Stage, it would be too late!

However, he was lucky. He killed a young lord of a big sect who was in the same cultivation level with him. It led to the continuous hunt and made him fight for survival on the edge of life and death. Those who were hunting him were all beyond him in cultivation. He wanted to survive so he had to fight with his life. One after another fight like that made him improve greatly!

He had new understandings about 'fast, accurate, and concentrated' after every fight!

He had to be fast, so that the enemy couldn't notice his moves. That guaranteed a hit on the enemy! As long as he was faster than the enemy, he could hit the enemy earlier!

He had to be accurate. He had to make sure every hit went on the right spot. It was always the most possible way to kill the enemy!

It wasn't enough to just be fast and accurate. To kill an enemy, he had to break the shield of spiritual energy. When he was facing those who were beyond him in cultivation, he had to fight even harder to break the shield. He had to concentrate his spiritual power into a certain purity when he made every attack, so that it could make the most effective strike!

Time and time again, he fought against the enemies for his life. He was improving by leaps and bounds! At the moment, he was already in level four of Dream Origin Stage!

...

Chapter 1022: That Night!

Although people were hunting him, even though he was still too weak in Qing-Yun Realm, he still believed that as long as he stayed alive, he would reach the top of this world with his marvelous martial art!

All that he could achieve was because of the help from Ye Xiao!

Ning Biluo was always a grateful man. He would cherish the kindness of others in his heart. He knew how much he owed Ye Xiao.

He knew that it was impossible to repay the great favor!

No matter how he felt, he had to run from death. As the Sky Voyage Sect kept failing for so many times, they sent out more stronger men for it. It made the situation even harder for Ning Biluo.

However, he didn't feel fear at all. Instead, he felt a thirst for it.

[Come!]

[Come fight harder!]

[Every time when I win a fight, I improve in desperation!]

[Improved! Upgrade! transform!]

[One day, I will root you up, you rubbish sect!]

He was calm and steady, disappearing in an area full of bushes.

After a while, several men arrived. They were cursing and swearing while searching the entire area.

After them, Ning Biluo's eyes lit up all of a sudden. He showed up again from nowhere like a ghost. He quietly followed the several men.

The sword in his hand was twinkling.

One sword, one man; invincible!

...

Zhao Pingtian was also having a sleepless night. However, he was in quite a different situation from Ning Biluo. Ning Biluo was hunted by the people, whose young lord was killed by him. He was forced to get through a sleepless night. Zhao Pingtian chose not to sleep himself. For quite some days, he had been sneaking here and there, as a greedy and shameless thief.

At least, within ten thousand miles, his reputation had become quite bad.

He was worse than a mouse on the street, or a man who was hated by both god and evil at the same time.

Unlike Ning Biluo who was forced to be an enemy to everybody, Zhao Pingtian became an enemy to everybody on his own initiative!

Basically, he stole or even robbed people of whatever he liked.

One thing he was the same with Ning Biluo was the fast improvement of cultivation.

He didn't get blessed like Ning Biluo, but he had a loyal supporter.

Although his wife still appeared as aa ghost, she could offer him lots of help.

When he was in a fight, she would stay with him trying to help. When he was free from danger, she would leave to find spiritual materials. Because she was free from physical attacks, she was able to find lots of medical materials.

This night, Zhao Pingtian chose to sit in meditation down below a cliff. Rou'er was out for medical material collection. She found a collapsed cave. It was actually a small hole on the mountain rather than a cave.

She smelled something with a dense medical scent.

The hole was too small for a person to get in, but she was a ghost. She entered the cave and found that it was a residence of a powerful cultivator from ancient time. Behind the hole, it was such a spacious area.

She hurriedly returned to Zhao Pingtian and told him about the cave. They excitedly came back to the cave. He excavated the hole until it was big enough for him to get through. After that, he put some disguise to cover the hole before he got into the cave.

He was thrilled.

[This... This is the residence of a super powerful cultivator of Saint Origin Stage?]

[But... since when was there was such a powerful figure in Qing-Yun Realm?]

No matter what, the truth was in front of him. He was so excited and he wouldn't get to sleep this night!

The sects and clans around this place within ten thousand miles started to have some peaceful days after this night.

The frightful thief Zhao Pingtian would disappear from the martial world for quite some time.

However, when he returned to the public, he would become much more horrible and difficult to defeat. He would be horribly improved! In other words, there would be a more terrible frightful thief traveling the realm!

That was certain!

...

Unlike Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian, Liu Changjun was having a much tougher time. Since he arrived in this world, he barely had any peaceful days. He was being hunted every single minute...

This night, he was just like Ning Biluo, being hunted and running from death.

He had at least done one thing well. He was now improved to level two of Dream Origin Stage.

Liu Changjun had left the area that used to be the only place he could live in after ascending to the new world. Not that he decided to leave though, he... was unable to stay anymore.

Ning Biluo was heroic; Zhao Pingtian was shameless; and Liu Changjun must be heinous!

He kept running to the east, escaping from the hunt. On the way to the east, he kept robbing and offending people. More and more people started to chase him. He got to improve during the nonstop running. When he was stronger, he kept messing with more people... That kept him escaping to the east.

Maybe it was destiny guiding him to the east. He was now quite close to the area where Ning Biluo stayed...

In the darkness of the night, Liu Changjun was like a rat searching for food. When he was fleeing, he basically did every disgraceful thing. However, no matter what he did, he always kept silent and moving in the direction he decided to go.

[When I become a super powerful cultivator, I will turn around and kill all the way back! You bunch of bastards hunt me and make me run like a dog! Wait and see!]

He swore in the heart.

Soon, he disappeared to the east...

...

It was finally dawn.

Ye Xiao had been waiting for this moment a whole night in silence.

When the wind blew over the Mountain of All Medicines, the light was appearing in the east. Endless purple qi burst and rose up from the horizon!

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. East-rising Purple Qi was operating in full power!

The purple light was glowing.

Han Bingxue had moved a few times in the night. However, Xuan Bing didn't even move her finger.

She was covered under the huge black robe as if she was part of the darkness. She was actually traceless.

When the purple qi was rolling from the east, Xuan Bing started to look to the east.

She was stunned.

Then she took a breath.

Who was she? A recognized super master cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm. She was only below Wu Fa, who hadn't shown up for a long time, on the list of most powerful figures. She was recognized as the second most powerful figure according to how powerful she had been a long time before. Nobody knew how powerful she was now after her disease was completely gone. Was she truly going to be defeated in a fight against Wu Fa?

Xuan Bing was asking herself about it too.

...

Chapter 1023: Forefather of the Ye Clan

Xuan Bing had marvelous power that was more powerful than people could imagine. Her rich experience and profound view were naturally beyond normal people's recognition. At this moment, although she didn't see the enormous purple qi from the north or used it, she felt the change of the world. She had a weak sense of the energy flows change. It was a huge wave that influenced the entire world!

She hadn't been stunned like this for a long time because she was too powerful. However, at this moment, the strange flows in the world shocked her greatly. She was lost in astonishment!

She could feel that the truth was exactly like what Ye Xiao told her!

She didn't realize how mysterious the mountain was, but she could feel that the mountain must be special because of the great change of the energy flows.

It proved that what Ye Xiao said earlier was all true!

"It turns out... this mountain is the key to everything here!"

Xuan Bing looked at Ye Xiao and made a sigh. She didn't know whether she should be happy or not.

[He is in a low level, but he can actually sense something that even I can't...]

...

Noise sounded. Over a dozen people were striding over to them.

They were Li Clan people, who had been hiding around for the night. Now it was dawn, so they showed up hurriedly.

They only wanted to get on the road to go up the mountain as soon as possible. The later they were, the easier to get into trouble. They clearly knew it!

When they arrived the last night, Ye Xiao, Han Bingxue and Xuan Bing had sensed them. They just didn't say it.

Now when they saw those men showing up in a posture like they were some mysterious figures, they just wanted to laugh. [That was pretentious.]

"Is that Brother Ye? I am Li Zihao. I am Qingzhou's uncle. Please accept my warm greeting, Brother Ye!" A middle-aged man smiled friendly and made a fist salute. He was apparently trying to be nice.

Ye Xiao didn't reply yet when he heard the sound of fighting and shouting from a distance. A fierce and loud voice was shouting, "Li Zihao, you Li Clan want to keep the treasures to yourself. You have to make sure you have the power to do so! A man whose heart is not content is like a snake which tries to swallow an elephant! How true! You have to realize that your greed has no limit and you should be scared!"

His voice was like the sound of blasting. He broke through the Li Clan's force like a lightning, shooting over to them.

All the Li Clan people who were standing on his way were all blasted away and bleeding. Nobody could stop that man.

"Ye Tianchen!" Li Zihao's expression changed as his pupils shrunk.

He never thought that Ye Clan's forefather would actually come out again.

That was right. Ye Tianchen was the most powerful figure in the Ye Clan at the moment. Ye Tianchen, the forefather of Ye Clan, level two Dao Origin Stage cultivator!

In this district, level two of Dao Origin Stage was already as powerful as god!

Ye Clan people wanted to break through Li Clan's blockade but failed in every attempt for nearly the whole night. They didn't

want to bother Ye Tianchen. They wanted their forefather to stay at home. However, in the end, they had to.

After all, it was the do-or-die situation for Ye Clan. If their forefather didn't come and make an effort, Ye Clan might fall below Li Clan and stay suppressed for thousands of years.

Besides, if their strongest man joined the fight, it would bring them confidence!

Ye Tianchen did not fail them. It was more than seven hundred miles he had traveled after he departed from Ye Clan to get to this place. He was rushing all the way and then broke the blockade of Li Clan. It only took him four hours to enter the Mountain of All Medicines.

That was overwhelming!

Now, the forefather of Ye Clan had passed all the men of Li Clan. He was standing right in front of Ye Xiao, staring at him with his sharp hawk eyes.

Ye Xiao looked back at him blandly, calm and steady. His eyes were like clear water, peaceful, quiet, and emotionless.

Ye Tianchen was not strong enough to move Ye Xiao. Even if he didn't have Han Bingxue standing aside, even though Ye Tianchen was much more powerful in cultivation level than Ye Xiao, Ye Xiao didn't take him seriously. He had the experience and profound view of a top-level Dao Origin Stage cultivator. He might still win a fight against a level two Dao Origin Stage cultivator!

Xuan Bing was still calm and steady. Han Bingxue had lazily stood up, half closing his eyes, like he just woke up from a deep sleep. He was staggering like he would fall asleep again soon.

Ye Xiao and Xuan Bing both knew that if Ye Tianchen dared to touch Ye Xiao, no matter whether Ye Xiao would fight back or not, Han Bingxue would rage up and kill him before anything else.

Ye Xiao might be able to defeat Ye Tianchen, but he wouldn't give

up any precaution. There was always a surprise. Nobody knew whether the old man had any special tricks or not. It was never too cautious!

"You are the young man? Ye?" Ye Tianchen looked at Ye Xiao and smiled. He seemed nice.

Ye Xiao spoke calmly, "That's right. I am also Ye."

He didn't have respect for this forefather of Ye Clan. He didn't like him.

Not that Ye Tianchen was impolite to him, it was... when what happened to Ye Nantian in the old days, Ye Tianchen, as the strongest man in Ye Clan, never said anything. Even when Ye Nantian was going to be expelled, he still never said anything righteous.

Ye Xiao just couldn't feel comfortable thinking about it.

What also annoyed him was that Ye Nantian wasn't allowed to join them this time!

It was already the last moment of Ye Clan. They should have sent out every force they had to help. Even the forefather was out! Yet Ye Nantian wasn't here. What did that indicate?

Apparently, the conflicts between different groups of people in the clan were always there. Even at the last moment of the clan, they still didn't want Ye Nantian and his people to have an opportunity to rise. Maybe they didn't see this as a crisis at all. Maybe in their heart, they thought this was a great opportunity to get more power in the clan. That was why they would rather let the others step away and not to share the profits!

...

Chapter 1024: Survival Rule

Ye Xiao had seen a lot in the world. He knew the truth about Ye Clan. He knew what those men were planning!

"I am a member of the senior generations. We are of the same clan." Ye Tianchen took a breath and said, "We are named Ye. I don't understand why you wouldn't help us but instead join the Li Clan's power?"

He sighed and said, "At the very least, Ye is Ye."

Ye Xiao blandly said, "There are over seventy billion people in Qing-Yun Realm. The name Ye is not a common surname, but there should be over two hundred million. Did you mean all these two hundred million people should always stay on the same side?"

Ye Tianchen frowned and seriously said, "We have the same surname. That means in the ancient days, our ancestors are one kin. Every one of us should do what benefits our kin."

Ye Xiao smiled and sneered, "Do you mean that we can sacrifice an individual for the interests of our clan? We can even sacrifice our own kin? We can also kneel and disgrace ourselves if it needs us to? Is it correct?"

There was grief in Ye Tianchen's eyes when he heard that. He probably knew what Ye Xiao was talking about. It must be how Ye Clan hurt Ye Nantian and expelled him.

Ye Xiao's sneer also told Ye Tianchen why he would be so hostile to Ye Tianchen since the beginning.

[Is that why he chose Li Clan over Ye Clan?]

[This young man... Why is he so interested in this case? Why did he particularly bring it up?]

Ye Tianchen cautiously asked, "Young man, what you mentioned is something that has passed. It is our own business. I don't think it

concerns you or anything, does it?"

Ye Xiao smiled and spoke in a deep voice, "Oh? Is it none of my business? Well, I guess you were joking when you said we are the same clan and all those bullsh*t. You are right. Ye Clan has nothing to do with me. I am just a stranger! How true! That is inspiring! I am impressed! I am encouraged to make my own choice without consideration for Ye Clan. Thanks!"

That was obvious sarcasm!

Ye Tianchen made a long sigh. "We did all that for our clan's rise. Compared to an entire clan, an individual never suffers too much!"

Ye Xiao coldly said, "You have such an advanced and exclusive view, old man. You stooped to compromise, bent yourselves, and destroyed the talented man in your clan by yourselves. Now you are telling me that is what you will do to make your clan rise? Really?"

Ye Tianchen made a sigh and felt depressed. "That's right!"

"That's right?"

Ye Xiao's pupils shrunk. [He actually just admitted it!]

At this moment, he truly felt impressed!

[Expelling their own talented man, watching the mediocrity take charge of the clan, how muddleheaded! Yet he actually just admitted it?]

"All in all, there is only one reason for everything. Ye Clan is not strong enough!" Ye Tianchen looked so old on the face. He said while sighing, "I never felt good about what happened. I never stopped reliving the pain afterwards.

"However, if I have a chance to go back and make the choice again, I will still do the same thing.

"I know it is cruel. I know it is shameful. I know it is unfair for Ye Nantian." He spoke sadly, "But... There is not much room for

justice and fairness in this realm. If Ye Nantian didn't leave, the entire Ye Clan would be destroyed by Qiong-Hua Palace. We would all be killed.

"Ye Nantian was wronged. He was expelled. But his sacrifice saved the entire clan.

"No matter how he was feeling, Ye Clan would never fight against Qiong-Hua Palace just because of him. We destroyed one man to save the clan. I feel ashamed but never regret!

"I am too weak to protect Ye Nantian. All I can do is to sacrifice him and bend my knees to save my clan.

"One day when Ye Clan rises, what we did will be the reason. No matter how we were ashamed of what we did, we have to keep our people alive.

"If we chose to fight, all we needed was only a word of mine! As long as I encouraged them, everybody would fight until the last drop of blood was drained. It would certainly be heroic and warm-blooded, but should we sacrifice everyone to just exchange for a name in the history? Really? Is it truly meaningful? I will never do anything to cut our bloodline!

"That's my reason.

"Ye Nantian is not here, so I said this. Even if he is here with me, I will say the same thing!

"I wouldn't change my decision!

"I am not afraid to be sacrificial, heroic, brave, and honorable. I long for it. However, I was not a boy anymore. I couldn't."

His eyes were full of deep emotions. "I am old. I have no chance to improve anymore. I don't have many days to live. Ye Clan can never die out. This is the only choice I, a member of Ye Clan, who is not strong enough, can make.

"I can't lead the clan to the great glory, to the top of the world. I

won't lead the clan to destruction either. The only thing I can do... is to save our blood, even though I may have to bear the shame and regret, even though I may never be qualified to see our ancestors in heavens.

"I feel ashamed, but never regret any of it!

"This is the clan business.

"This is what a clan has to sacrifice.

"We had no choice. We were facing Qiong-Hua Palace. We could only compromise. That was our only choice."

Ye Xiao was silent. For a long while, he didn't say a word.

Not only Ye Xiao, but also Han Bingxue and Xuan Bing, even the people of Li Clan who were hostile to Ye Tianchen were in sorrow.

Ye Tianchen's hair were all grey, fluttering in the morning air. He looked sorrowful as he blandly said, "Big sects live in the world for a long long time because they have their own glorious past. We small clans also have our own ways to survive.

"Otherwise, we won't live long."

...

Chapter 1025: Equal Match

Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts.

When he was Xiao Monarch in the previous life, he had only experienced the difficulty at the beginning of his life. After that, he had been living like a dragon and become a super powerful cultivator at the end.

He had the power and social position to do all those glorious and heroic things!

However, he never knew the rules all those small clans should follow to survive the world because he was never a member of any clan.

Just like Ye Tianchen said, Ye Clan was not a big clan. It seemed to be a conqueror of a certain area, but was, in fact, nothing in the eyes of the true powerful figures. That was awkward. They could have been wiped out just because they accidentally pissed off a powerful man.

It was such an awkward situation for a clan because of the position the clan was in. They were better than the worst but much worse than the best. They had no powerful support from outside. The real powerful figures never cared for such an unimportant clan. They were living to survive in the crevice of the society.

What they had to pay for the survival were always too sorrowful and insufferable to tell!

The young generation of Song Clan, Ye Clan, and Li Clan seemed to be riding the high horses in Oracle District, like they were only second to god, but the leadership of these clans clearly knew that they were just nothing in people's eyes when they went out this district. They were too weak.

That was the reason why people in Oracle District barely left

their hometown to seek for more successful achievement!

For those powerful sects, any forces from Oracle District were just some weak medicine collectors.

They were only useful for medicine collection, nothing more.

After all, people in powerful sects would never go to the wild only to collect some medicines. That was wasting time and reducing their value.

It was perfect to let the native people in Oracle District do the meaningless work!

"He meant every word he said. He was telling the truth," Xuan Bing talked to Ye Xiao through mind communication.

In fact, even if Xuan Bing didn't say anything, Ye Xiao knew it himself. This forefather of Ye Clan was telling the truth. He meant every word he just said. He was being honest because he wanted to explain it to Ye Xiao. He wanted Ye Xiao to stop blaming the leadership of Ye Clan.

Ye Xiao blandly said, "I have no interest in your clan business. However, I appreciate your explanation. And I am sorry to hear it."

Ye Tianchen spoke bitterly with a smile, "No need to appreciate me. No need to feel sorry. I have been feeling the pain for many years. I am old. I guess I should at least tell the public why we made that decision.

"It has been buried inside my heart. It tortured me. I am afraid that the truth from my side will be buried with my dead body one day and nobody will ever get to know it, nobody will understand why we did it.

He smiled bitterly and said, "When we knew Nantian might become friends with a saintess in Qiong-Hua Palace, we were so happy because it was such a great thing for us. We might get a long-term connection to Qiong-Hua Palace. That was definitely a great opportunity for Ye Clan to rise.

"However, Nantian should never become lovers with the saintess and even dream about marrying her. The step he took in their relationship caused a disaster in Ye Clan."

"Dragon to dragon; phoenix to phoenix; mouse to mouse..." Ye Tianchen seemed self-mocking. He smiled bitterly and said, "It is the basic standard for a couple to be equally matched. Ye Clan is so much weaker than Qiong-Hua Palace. We are in two totally different leagues. They didn't get the right to marry each other. Besides, Ye Nantian was going to marry a saintess of Qiong-Hua Palace."

"For example, if a millionaire's daughter is going to marry a guy who was poor and heavily-indebted, he might want to cripple his own daughter, but he would definitely disable that stupid man."

"It wasn't just about respect... It concerns a lot of things. It concerns one's dignity, emotion, friend circle, reputation... Qiong-Hua Palace could never accept such an embarrassment. Ye Clan was never qualified enough to be connected to them in such a way. It is fine if a toad only dreams about marrying a swan, but it will be courting death if it attempts to do so."

What Ye Tianchen said was understandable for Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao totally got it.

If Ye Nantian and Yue Gongxue were only friends, even close friends, she would still be the saintess of Qiong-Hua Palace, so she was definitely capable of benefiting Ye Clan to help them rise soon.

However, if they were married, it meant Qiong-Hua Palace's saintess was stained.

When a toad married the swan, the swan was no longer anything graceful, elegant, and special. A saintess who married a man from a low clan was no longer a saintess. When that happened, if the great palace only blamed the person who stained their saintess but spared the others in his clan, it would be a great mercy.

In fact, if Ye Nantian was in a higher position in the martial world, things might end up differently. If he was a disciple of one of the seven great sects, he might be considered an equal match to her.

However, he was not!

He was only a man of a local clan of Oracle District. Even though he was known as a talented man in his clan, it wouldn't help.

That was where the tragedy began.

"Equal match..." Ye Xiao made a long sigh.

"There may be lots of unworthy men in the clan. We may have made many decisions that destroyed our talented members, but... it is something we have to do."

Ye Tianchen spoke seriously, "The clan has to live on. When the water is too clear, there are no fish. One should not demand absolute purity, otherwise, he will have no friends.

"I decided to come today because deep in my heart, I know I have to do this. I have to seize the opportunity to ask for your help so that our clan will live on."

He made a long sigh and looked at Ye Xiao. "Please, little brother, I am begging your forgiveness. I have explained about the past. This time, the trip to the mountain, Ye Clan has to be a part of it."

"No! No way!" Li Clan people jumped out and shouted before Ye Tianchen finished. "Brother Ye is our honorable guest. We made a deal... Why do you Ye Clan have to make such demand..."

...

Chapter 1026: Enter Together!

As expected, Li Clan and Ye Clan started a debate. It was a fight of words now.

In the end, Ye Tianchen ended the debate with the last statement.

"If you Li Clan truly won't agree, I will declare war. We will fight against Li Clan from now on until the last person of us dies!" Ye Tianchen coldly said, "Let's just splash the blood here. You are going to cut off our path to life after all. We will not let you go. If we are going to hell, you are coming with us. Nobody enters the third layer alone! Nobody keeps the treasure alone!"

He left Li Clan people no other choice but only to give in. Ye Clan was threatening them with their lives. If Li Clan didn't give in, it would lead to a fatal combat. It was always said that the sorrowful side always won. However, even if Li Clan won the fight, there was no prize for the winner.

After a debate, an agreement was eventually made. Each clan would send ten people to enter Heaven Treasure Mountain at the same time.

Li Clan people led the way.

No matter where they were going, nobody should start a fight. Ye Tianchen was not allowed to enter.

Li Clan people insisted that Ye Tianchen stayed outside.

Ye Tianchen certainly couldn't go for fairness. He was much more powerful than others. If he got in, he could kill Li Clan's ten people immediately. All the treasures would become Ye Clan's. That would leave no arguments! All Li Clan did would be helping Ye Clan.

Ye Tianchen agreed.

In fact, he knew that Li Clan would never let him enter. It was meaningless to argue for that.

In fact, when they were negotiating, none of them ever asked for Ye Xiao's opinion.

Ye Xiao was shocked.

He never expected things to change like this.

If Zuo Wuji was here, he would probably be impressed by the two clans. People on both sides were good at being politicians, changing their views according to circumstances, and circumventing for their own interests... Any of the two clans could rule a kingdom in the Land of Han-Yang, even conquer the world!

What Ye Xiao had been planning was to let Li Clan people lead him into the mountain and then he would kill all the Li Clan people in there, maybe to hand them over to the beasts...

Now that the two clans were going in together, how could he proceed such a plan?

Should he kill them all? Was it appropriate?

For strangers, he truly didn't have compassion, but he wasn't always a merciless person. Besides, Ye Clan was more or less related to him!

As the two clans had reached the same conclusion, he figured he shouldn't be a dissenter. He rubbed the nose and blandly said yes, but he made a condition.

"The three of us will go together." Ye Xiao looked at Han Bingxue and Xuan Bing.

"Yes!"

"I am not going in."

Two voices sounded at the same time. They were shocked.

Han Bingxue would love to go. It was Xuan Bing who wouldn't.

Ye Tianchen's face twitched.

[How come his attendants have different views.]

Xuan Bing looked at Ye Xiao and said, "I have been there too many times. I am not interested."

Ye Xiao was enlightened. He realized he was being stupid.

Misty Cloud Palace was badly in need of Regeneration Ink Lotus. They needed it to save their lives. Xuan Bing was the Prime Elder of Misty Cloud Palace, the most powerful figure, of course, she had already been to this mountain by herself. She must be quite familiar with this place. She must have searched every inch of this mountain except the area on top of the mountain which wasn't accessible.

Ye Xiao had such a powerful figure beside him, yet he actually looked for support from others. What he had planned was just a fruitless and redundant approach. He did want to seek for other things from the mountain, but that wasn't the point...

He looked at those men of Li Clan and Ye Clan. He thought, [They are probably going to waste their time. Xuan Bing must have searched every inch of this place for several times... It is very likely that there is no Regeneration Ink Lotus inside anymore...]

He was smart, but he didn't fully understand what Xuan Bing was thinking.

She didn't want to go because first of all, she had been there for too many times; second... it was Ye Xiao's blessed fortune since he was the only person who sensed the energy!

Xuan Bing wanted Ye Xiao to take the blessed opportunity himself. If she went with them, even though Ye Xiao didn't know she was Bing'er, he would still share some of whatever he found to her!

She surely would love to have it, but she knew that Ye Xiao needed it more than her!

That was why Xuan Bing didn't want to go. [I don't want any of it. I want you to have it all!]

In fact, she didn't want Han Bingxue to get in either. However, she was concerned that Ye Xiao might need help when he got in.

Han Bingxue could keep Ye Xiao safe in case anything happened!

So she didn't stop Han Bingue.

Otherwise, Xuan Bing would rather disable Han Bingxue immediately than let him follow Ye Xiao into the mountain and share the profits...

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were going in. However, Li Clan and Ye Clan both had conflicts among themselves. Everybody wanted to get in. They nearly started an internal fight.

However, they came to a final decision eventually.

Ye Clan sent ten middle-aged men, who were all energetic and spirited. Ye Xiao glanced at them and looked away. Ye Nantian wasn't there.

None of the ten men looked a bit like Ye Nantian.

He figured that he should make sure which group were the ten middle-aged men from. It concerned his safety after all!

"You must be the elites of Ye Clan, all of you?" Ye Xiao casually asked, "Which group are you from?"

Ye Tianchen was surprised. He looked at Ye Xiao and smiled. "They are all from second and fourth. They might not be that powerful, but they are not bad."

Li Clan had chosen ten people. They were walking over.

They looked at each other. None of them disagreed with the leadership's decision. They looked at Ye Xiao, wanting to see if Ye Xiao had any other opinion.

Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts. [These men lead my father into

such a difficulty. Should I find a chance to feed the beasts inside with these men?]

[Li Clan's ten people must also be some vile figures. Should I just let them die in it too? To bury some more men with the dead men from my own clan. It sounds fair!]

The flame of fierceness was rising in Ye Xiao's heart. He had come up with dozens of evil ideas in his head in a short time. Every idea could make the twenty people die in pieces in the Mountain of All Medicines!

...

Chapter 1027: Mudslinging of Both Sides

Ye Xiao was being lost in thoughts. It seemed to be sending a signal to Li Zihao and Ye Tianchen that he was terrified by the people who were sent by both teams.

For Ye Tianchen and Li Zihao, it was reasonable and understandable that he was terrified!

How could such a young man not be frightened by groups of their elites!

Those who had lower views and less experience always had a smoother future. Ignorance brought happiness. How true!

...

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were lazily walking in front. The twenty men from the two clans were following them. There was a clear boundary between the two teams.

Ye Tianchen and Li Zihao were staying behind, with hundreds of their people.

They all felt like they were watching their brothers die in the battle without any reason.

Twenty-two men walked to the Mountain of All Medicines. After taking a turn, they disappeared.

They had entered the Manifestation Mystic Array.

An old man, who was a forefather of Li Clan, looked at Ye Tianchen and said, "Old Ye!"

Ye Tianchen answered, "Hmm. Good boy. What is it?"

The old man raged up, "God damn it. Stop taking advantage of me."

Ye Tianchen was speechless.

The old man nagged for a while and then lowered his head before

sighing. After a while, he remembered he should go on, so he smiled. "I heard that your great grandchild, Ye Nantian is back?"

Ye Tianchen's expression changed. "Just cut the bullsh*t! What is it?"

"It is such a pity, Old Ye. Your great grandchild, he is such a good lad." The old man seemed gloating. He wanted Ye Clan to fall into chaos. "In fact, you should let him..."

Before he finished, Ye Tianchen realized what he was going to say. He shouted and then rushed over with a fist.

The old man was prepared for that. - Bang! - He blocked the fist attack and then kicked out one foot. Two forefathers got into a chaotic fight...

Hundreds of superior cultivators from both clans all seemed to be ignoring them as if the two old men were just some strangers to the two clans.

In fact, they all knew that the two old men had some weird connection. They used to be sworn enemies hundreds of years earlier. They had been against each other since they were children. One beat the other up one day and the other way around the next day. They were still the same now, fighting against each other, but none of them died!

Whenever they met each other, they would fight.

Many people assumed that they were cherishing each other. Even if any of them had a chance to kill the other, they wouldn't. However, as time passed by, people would get to know that the hatred in their hearts against each other was real. They hated each other to the bottom of their hearts.

They couldn't wait to watch each other die the next moment. For so many years, none of them could kill each other. They were equal.

Ye Tianchen was definitely the best among both Li Clan and Ye

Clan people. However, he was just a little bit stronger than the old man of Li Clan...

If Ye Tianchen wanted to defeat that old man, he had to make a perfect plan. However, if he wanted to kill the old man... it was just impossible.

...

Ye Xiao didn't know what was happening back there. Even if he did, he would just ignore it.

He and the others had gotten into an area that was filled with a dense fog.

"This is the first layer of Heaven Treasure Mountain." Li Clan people, who was leading the way, moved so fast in the fog like they could see through it. They were just so familiar with this place. They could walk into the mountain with their eyes closed. "There is nothing in the first layer... Not even a grass."

From Ye Clan, a middle-aged man coldly said, "There used to be medicines in this place. It is over exploited. Nothing is left."

The leader of Li Clan people coughed and said, "Not far away, on the other side, the fog will be thinner. It is the second layer of the mountain. There will be something to collect there. Between the first and second layers, there are about five thousand meters of height."

The leader of Ye Clan people coldly said, "How is that not far away? It will take nearly two thousand steps uphill, three hundred steps on flat road, and about eight hundred steps uphill again to reach the second layer. It is not just five thousand meters in height either. It is 5695 meters. This is the exact number."

The man of Li Clan was annoyed. "Ye Shangxin, do you have to be so hostile to me? You just have to set yourself against me all the time, don't you? Or are youi just bored?"

The man of Ye Clan, Ye Shangxin, coldly said, "I just don't like it

when you do everything in the most vicious way. You wish you could dig out every inch of the land, yet keep something left behind every time..."

"Just stop talking sh*t. Li Chongshan, listen to yourself. Tell me, isn't it Li Clan who ripped the entire first layer off? You actually said 'not even a grass'... Of course not. The first layer is like the back yard of your clan. It is definitely clean..."

Ye Shangxin was disdainful.

Apparently, he disliked Li Chongshan.

Li Chongshan's face turned red with anger. He said, "What do you mean? You Ye Clan was only too slow. You wanted to do this too. How can you blame us? Do you want us to do it after you get all the good stuff? There used to be Regeneration Ink Lotus in this layer. There may be some seeds of the lotus in the grasses. We took everything back because we didn't want to give up any possibility to plant the lotus. The seed is the key to get the plants... You know nothing."

Ye Shangxin coldly said, "Oh? So we don't know the importance of the seed? Brilliant Li, please tell me how many Regeneration Ink Lotus have you planted now? One thousand and two hundred acres of land to plant the grass, yet you haven't planted even a piece of sh*t out of it... Don't you think that we didn't know it! All forces around our area know that you Li Clan are a bunch of fools!"

Li Chongshan raged up, "Nonsense! Your views are short! Wait and see. It is just a matter of time. We will get the lotus eventually..."

Ye Shangxin interrupted, "Our views are short? Fine. Let's say you are right. But... Why didn't you take all the grasses in the second layer back too? There should be more seeds in the second layer, right?"

Li Chongshan was breathing heavily because of anger. He kept

walking ahead. After a while, he spoke through his teeth, "We have a deal between our clans. I can't violate it. When we are outside the mountain, I will kill you! Ye Shangxin, wait and see!"

Ye Xiao nearly laughed out. He got to know that Li Clan had apparently done something stupid once...

...

Chapter 1028: Heaven Treasure Mountain

Ye Shangxin casually said, "That isn't quite honest. It is the 753rd time you said so to me since we first met. However, you have never been able to touch me even one finger. For as long as I can remember, you've had my lessons many times! Let me give you a warm warning. If you want me to torture you, you better find some other words to say. I am bored with what you just said. It is dishonest!"

The two clans were sworn enemies. Their men could start a quarrel inside a dense fog. It began when they were in the first layer. Now as they were in the second layer, it seemed they weren't going to stop yet...

Even though they were in the foggiest place filled with spiritual qi, they still wouldn't shut up.

The others were just listening to them at the beginning. In the end, some Li Clan people said a word first, and then a person of Ye Clan replied. That was it. It upgraded. In the end, twenty men started a chaotic quarrel.

Urh... A quarrel.

Longer as they disputed, the more energetic they became!

They seemed enjoying it, but Ye Xiao was so annoyed.

It was the first time he ever saw clans like these two.

They obviously hated each other so deeply into the bones. They wanted each other to die in pieces so bad. However, they barely fought each other with their lives...

All they did was squabbling and squabbling.

They always squabbled like they couldn't be angrier, yet never truly started a fight for decades...

"Unbelievable!" Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao looked at the sky and

made a long sigh. Maybe they were praising?

Maybe they were. When they listened to the quarrel, they found one thing that was quite impressive. They would say all different kinds of abusive words but never insulted any females or ancestors of each other. No matter what they said, they never humiliated them.

"Why don't they abuse each other's ancestors?" Han Bingxue was curious. "No ancestors? No mothers? It has always been abusive words against one's mother out there..."

As he asked, the people of both clans stopped abruptly. They were suddenly quiet.

Li Chongshan awkwardly said, "We are just trying our best not to insult their families. Once we do, maybe this is going to be a life and death conflict... We surely want to kill each other, but we don't want to risk our lives. Lives for lives. That is not wise... So..."

Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao were both shocked.

"Unbelievable!" they shouted at the same time. Believe it or not, that was definitely a praise!

It was the first time they had ever heard of such a theory.

[You guys hate each other. You compete against each other. You cultivate yourselves like crazy to become stronger. You search for medical materials like crazy. You would sacrifice almost everything to raise the power of your clan. However, you never actually fight, but just open your mouths and abuse each other like women...]

[The reason is that... you are all afraid of death!]

Ye Xiao couldn't be more wordless.

[Holy heavens!]

[The world is peculiar indeed.]

[Truth is always beyond imagination!]

[More importantly, one of the two clans is Ye Clan, my father's clan...]

After an awkward silence, Ye Shangxin said, "We truly want them to die... We do want to fight and take revenge. However, we two clans are both on the edge of collapse. If we start the fight, we will be weakened... I am afraid that will be benefiting others."

"Our clans... can't afford any loss anymore."

After that, Li Chongshan and Ye Shangxin made a long sigh together.

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[Holy heavens. I heard that Ye Liangchen and Li Qingzhou were shouting about how powerful Li Clan and Ye Clan were among the strongest forces in Oracle District. Were they lying? Were both clans already in a desperate situation?]

He was lost in thoughts. Suddenly, something lit up in front of them...

[Hmm? The second layer is ahead.]

This was his first time to come to the second layer of the Mountain of All Medicines. He felt something lighting up in his sight. The fog was disappearing. It was still foggy, but a huge garden seemed to show up in his sight. Every piece of the boundless green and all the splendid colors filled his sight.

The second layer of the mountain was actually just like a huge grassland. Standing in this place, he felt like they were no longer standing on a mountain.

His face looked calm, but he was stunned inside his heart.

[This is definitely not just a mountain... There must be something behind the scenes.]

[Does this mountain create its own world inside as the myth says?]

[If it is not a self-created world, it must at least be a self-created space!]

The first layer had a huge area, however, it was much smaller than the second layer.

The second layer was at least twice bigger than the first!

That was against nature's rule...

Normally, the lower layer should be broader than the upper ones. However, from what he could see, this mountain was in an opposite situation. What he saw were all true. No matter how experienced Ye Xiao was, this place was too strange for him. The only explanation he could think of was a self-created space!

However... If this was true...

How broad should the third layer be?

Twice bigger than the second?

What about the fourth?

Even bigger? That was unbelievably huge!

There was an important question about this mountain. How many layers did the mountain have?

Ye Xiao felt terrified just thinking about it.

[What is the secret buried in this Mountain of All Medicine?]

Not many things in the world could terrify Ye Xiao. This was his second life after all. However, this mountain actually terrified him! That was some negative emotion he hadn't felt for a long time!

Twenty-two men entered this layer. They were not as careful as earlier anymore. It suddenly burst into chaos in the second layer. All kinds of beasts ran and flew away in a panic.

Countless animals were running among the colorful plants...

There were actually many level three and level four spiritual

beasts among them.

As they could see, the animals were running away like the ebb tide... moving far away...

What a grand scene!

It seemed they had gotten used to it for a long time. Watching the animals fleeing, they were emotionless. They just kept doing what they should do and ignored it.

...

Chapter 1029: Gradualness

"This is the second layer. It is over ten thousand acres, including valleys and other landforms. I can assure you that there is not even one Regeneration Ink Lotus in this layer."

Li Chongshan, the only person of the Li Clan team staying beside Ye Xiao, spoke, "There are some normal medicines in this place, which are much less valuable compared to Regeneration Ink Lotus."

The other man who stayed with Ye Xiao humphed and coldly said, "It is 13735 acres, including forty-seven cliffs, seventy-three valleys, and two depressions. There are still some Regeneration Ink Lotus here. They are just too small yet. Some of them cannot offer enough efficacy, while the others are impossible to transplant. What we can do is to set protection on them until the day they can be collected. We Ye Clan have set the protection. I believe only Ye Clan did, too Don't argue on this absolute truth. It will be meaningless and only lower your position, even though you vicious bastard never had a position in the righteous world for a long time!"

When he said those words, he didn't even look at Li Chongshan. What he did was just to satirize as much as he could.

Li Chongshan looked utterly awkward. His eyes were full of viciousness. "Ye Shangxin, we never have any life and death fights. However, if we both can get out of this place alive, I will kill you! I swear in the name of my ancestors!"

Ye Shangxin coldly said, "Isn't it the twenty-eighth time that you swore in the name of you poor ancestors? Twenty-eight times that I know and a lot more that I don't! I guess you would love to take a vow in the name of your ancestors. You don't get to fulfill it anyway. You never did. You never will. That's why you are so audacious.

"I guess your ancestors never mean anything to you... considering how casually you swear in their name..."

"From now on, you can announce that I am not a match to you on this aspect. I officially admit it. I am so much weaker than you in humiliating our ancestors. I admire you! I can't admire you more!"

Li Chongshan gritted his teeth and showed a dark expression. "Good! Fine! Wait and see!"

He nodded fiercely and then left fast.

Ye Xiao coldly watched them and thought, [How possible is it that they will start a fight when they are out? Will Li Chongshan keep his vow?]

His conclusion was, [There is only a five percent possibility.]

The reason why there was still a five percent was that maybe Ye Shangxin would be seriously injured in this place. Li Chongshan would dare to do it. Although it was not very likely going to happen, there was still a possibility!

In the second layer, there were a few wide roads that became narrower after an unknown amount of walking. There were too many people who had come to this place, and their footsteps created the roads.

Ye Shangxin humphed and explained to Ye Xiao about this place.

Ye Xiao pretended to be interested in the topic. He didn't go search for medical materials like the others, so that as time passed, the three of them were left behind the group.

Ye Shangxin was leading way and explaining things in this layer to Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue. However, he was leading Ye Xiao through the second floor to the third.

Ye Xiao understood what Ye Shangxin was doing. He knew that Ye Shangxin didn't want him to waste time in this layer for those materials. He sighed that even though Ye Shangxin seemed more

righteous than Li Chongshan, he was narrow-hearted. The materials in the second layer were never attractive to Ye Xiao. In fact, even Regeneration Ink Lotus or even Regeneration Jade Lotus couldn't draw his interests. After all, he had so many of them in the Space. He would never waste time on such useless things in this layer.

[Even if you give all of them to me, I will not bother to find a place to put them!]

However, Ye Shangxin was doing quite well as a guide. He explained everything, all in detail to Ye Xiao all along the way. Even if Li Chongshan heard him and wanted to tease him, he couldn't find any mistake Ye Shangxin made in the explanation.

It was so difficult to be picky sometimes!

Maybe because Li Chongshan couldn't find anything to tease Ye Shangxin, the two of them stopped arguing afterwards.

However, it was not always so peaceful. They encountered some dangers. For example, they encountered a bunch of huge bees that suddenly rushed over like blowing wind. Besides, they met some poisonous snakes that suddenly appeared in the bushes and rushed over so fast.

They also got attacked by some beasts that none of them recognized.

Luckily, the men from Ye Clan and Li Clan were all elites of their clans. Most importantly, the beasts in the second layer were not in any high levels. They were not strong. The beasts that attacked them eventually became spirit crystals. Those were something good to acquire.

What troubled Ye Xiao was the Manifestation Mystic Array's continuous changes. As they walked further, the array was changing all the time. The roads under their feet were changing and twisting...

After all the effort, they barely collected any valuable materials.

Most of the materials were normal. Not to mention Ye Xiao, even the others scorned it!

Ye Xiao felt like he was walking in a mysterious colorful world which kept twisting and turning.

However, Ye Clan and Li Clan people seemed quite familiar with all that. After searching for a while, they started to move fast and got together somewhere in the second layer.

There was a huge rock cliff.

There was only one stair they could see on the cliff. Apparently, it must be the road to the upper layer.

However, the upper stairs were all hidden in the dense fog. They couldn't see what was up there.

Ye Xiao tried reaching his hand into the fog. He could see that a part of his arm was lost in the fog.

When he withdrew his hand, he found his sleeve was all wet.

"This is the entrance to the third layer." Ye Shangxin took a deep breath and said, "The third layer of the Mountain of All Medicines. It is absolutely a taboo area of Oracle District. In the young generation's eyes, it is somewhere nobody can reach. A mysterious area. However, for the leadership of all the big clans, there are countless opportunities inside it, even though there are lots of dangers too. According to the men of the older generation who once entered and returned luckily... the beasts inside are all over level seven. There are many in level eight, level nine, and even beyond level nine. For us, it is somewhere a small careless mistake can take our lives. A really dangerous place. However... because it is such a dangerous place, the materials should be much more abundant than the second layer."

...

Chapter 1030: Triple Layers of Heaven

Ye Shangxin sighed. He seemed upset. "It is full of treasures. That is not a lie. However, one could only risk his life to prove it. It is mostly just an attempt, not an exchange, because even if you give up your life in there, you may still not be able to get the materials back."

"There is one thing that is strange. The fog is much denser than the first layer. Our vision will be restricted." He turned to Ye Xiao and said, "Brother, you said you have once entered the third layer... I wonder if what I said is right?"

Ye Xiao nodded and blandly said, "That's true. But... I am afraid it is much more dangerous than you think... According to what I have experienced in there, I reckoned those people that you mentioned who survived didn't really go far in it before they started to run out. They simply stopped when they realized it was too dangerous. That was the right thing to do after all. They were risking their lives. It was clever to give up when they realized the danger."

Ye Shangxin took a breath of relief and said, "I see. After all, the third layer is too dangerous."

"The experience of Ye Clan people surely helps me a lot. However, as far as I know about the third layer, there may not be many Regeneration Ink Lotus. I can understand your expectation, but I am afraid you will be disappointed if you wish for too much!" Ye Xiao was being frank.

The men of both clans all stayed silent.

Suddenly, the twenty men started to stare at each other with viciousness in the eyes.

Ye Xiao just took a smart move to stir up the tension among the two clans by saying those words.

'There may not be many Regeneration Ink Lotus.'

It was true. Although he hadn't really been to the third layer, he knew that Xuan Bing had been there many times. Since Xuan Bing had entered the third layer, she definitely would focus on the lotus. How many Regeneration Ink lotus would be left after her visits then?

Ye Xiao figured it wouldn't be a lot!

However, the question wasn't truly about 'not many'.

Not many...

What did that mean?

First of all, he indicated that there were Regeneration Ink Lotus. Second, he wanted them to know that there were not many left.

If there were many, the two clans would just be busy collecting the lotuses. Maybe one would get more than the other, and some of them would feel annoyed, but nothing serious would happen.

The 'not many' brought up a big problem now...

As Ye Xiao knew, there would be just a few lotuses left.

Since there were only a few... it was most likely that none of the two clans could get enough lotuses as they were required to. They would think of snatching the lotuses from one another!

No matter what the result would be, whoever got all the lotuses would become the winner!

The twenty men were all considering the same thing. They were thinking about how to kill the other ten people to keep them in this place!

They had to kill all ten. If any one of the ten survived, things would go chaotic. It had to be a wipe-out!

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up too. He suddenly spoke in a deep voice, "When we came in, you two clans had a deal. You can't fight in

here!"

Ye Shangxin spoke, "Heh, heh!"

Li Chongshan said, "Haha!"

Ye Xiao rubbed the nose and said, "Fine. Let me see if I can get you all in. This is what we should do in priority."

Apparently, the two men of the two clans had made up their minds. Once they got into this place, what they promised outside didn't mean anything anymore...

Ye Xiao went to the entrance and closed his eyes as if he was thinking. In fact, he was trying to recall something. He noticed the Manifestation Mystic Array had changed again.

Some changes were so strange to him even though he knew so well about how the array changed.

At the moment, Ye Clan people were standing beside him while the Li Clan were behind. Li Chongshan now understood why Ye Shangxin kept teasing him. He just wanted to take his place to be the guide.

Now it was obvious. He wanted to be the guide because when Ye Xiao opened the entrance to the third layer, Ye Clan people could go with him in advance.

Li Clan people were staying in a negative position. No matter how fast they moved, they had to wait until Ye Clan's men all got in!

It was just a short time, but it was a very important difference. If there were Regeneration Ink Lotus inside, this difference would lead to a certain result. Ye Clan wouldn't have enough time to notice the lotus and collect it...

Even if there were beasts protecting the lotuses, they could even collect the lotus and ran away fast, even leaving the beasts to deal with the men behind them. That would create a horrible situation

for Li Clan people...

If that happened, Li Clan's ten people would be serving Ye Clan's interests. They might even get themselves killed by the beasts. They would fail to get any profits!

"Ye Shangxin, you vile bastard! Now I know what you are!" Li Chongshan scolded while gritting his teeth.

Ye Xiao casually put both his hands into the fog that separated the second layer from the third layer. He moved his hands slowly and then asked, "By the way, according to what you said, there are people among you who once have entered this place before. Why can't they do it again now? It doesn't make sense."

Ye Shangxin said, "Those who entered this place all did it by accident. In recent years, the array on the mountain changes frequently. The methods that might lead us in are now all useless."

Ye Xiao said, "Oh?"

"Besides, even if we did go in, it might not be a good thing. After all, there are level nine spiritual beasts according to the myth. Nobody wants to go in there to risk their lives unless there is no other choice... Please be careful too, master," the more Ye Shangxin explained, the harder it was to make it reasonable. He couldn't justify his story.

However, Ye Xiao just smiled. He apparently didn't care at all!

[Be careful?]

[That is not something you can keep away by just being careful!]

There are many spiritual beasts in Qing-Yun Realm. Normally, a level seven spiritual beast was equally powerful as a level three of four Dream Origin Stage cultivator. It wasn't that terrifying. However, a level nine spiritual beast was equal to a Dao Origin Stage cultivator.

A beast at the peak of level nine could be as powerful as a level

eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator!

There were also hyper-nine spiritual beasts...

Hyper-nine beasts were rare. Ye Xiao hadn't seen any before. However, a hyper-nine beast should be as powerful as Han Bingxue or Xiao Monarch in his previous life!

...

Chapter 1031: Streams of Spiritual Beasts

If there were one or two hyper-nine spiritual beasts, it wasn't a desperate situation yet. For example, Xuan Bing could easily handle such a situation as easily as she tortured Han Bingxue!

However, even though she was able to torture Han Bingxue, it wouldn't be easy if she needed to fight against Xiao Monarch, Jun Yinglian, and Han Bingxue at the same time. At least, it wouldn't be a landslide. It was the same when she fought the hyper-nine beasts. She could easily kill a single hyper-beast alone easily, but if she encountered a group...

Xuan Bing had mentioned it before that she had met a group of hyper-nine beasts when she searched deep in the third layer. She quit the search because of it. Wu Fa was also forced to quit when he was in the third layer.

According to Xuan Bing, she and Wu Fa both didn't enter the fourth layer.

That was enough to prove how horrible the third layer was!

It was exactly the utmost limit of power in Qing-Yun Realm!

"Oh, right. How many layers does the Mountain of All Medicines have in total according to the knowledge of your own clans?" Ye Xiao was moving his hands fast inside the fog and calmly asked.

"The Mountain of All Medicines is what you outsiders call it. We native people call it Heaven Treasure Mountain." Ye Shangxin looked steady. He didn't seem impatient at all. "The reason why we call it Heaven Treasure Mountain is... according to what our ancestors imparted, when this mountain came from the sky, there was a stone in the first layer that said 'first layer of heaven'.

"The second layer had a stone with 'second layer of heaven' on it. Nobody has ever seen a stone in the third layer because nobody explored it. I am not sure if there is a stone like that in the third

layer. However, I believe there is...

"Every layer of the mountain is fully planted with all kinds of medicines. Every single one is a treasure. That is why we call it Heaven Treasure Mountain. However... we don't know how many layers are there in total. Nobody has ever fully explored the mountain after all. It is something no human being has ever achieved in the world."

Ye Shangxin sighed and continued, "Brother Ye, I believed you have heard about this... People in Oracle District are always weaker than people in other districts. The beasts in this mountain are so powerful. As we go up, the beasts will be more powerful. We don't want to recklessly go somewhere we don't know enough since we might set free some high-level spiritual beasts, especially those beyond level four... We truly don't know whether people in Qing-Yun Realm are enough to feed the beasts in here..."

Ye Xiao's face twisted.

[Enough to feed the beasts?]

[That is... creepy. It makes me feel cold on the back.]

However, it was true and honest. The beasts in the third layer were powerful enough to stop Xuan Bing and Wu Fa from going up. The beasts in the upper layers should be more horrible!

Suddenly, Ye Xiao moved one of his hand to grab Erhuo out from the Boundless Space and put it into his clothes on the chest like it was a doll.

"You are awake now, aren't you? Time to work." Since he would have to face all those powerful and unknown beasts, he could certainly make use of this 'primal spirit in chaos'!

According to what it had done in the past, it must be fairly useful in such a situation.

How could Ye Xiao not send out his most powerful weapon in this life and death situation?

He did it so quickly. Even Ye Shangxin, who was standing right in front of him, couldn't see what he just took out from his hand. He only saw a mass of soft and furry thing being dragged out and put into his clothes. He didn't know what it was at all...

The only thing he could be sure of was that Ye Xiao calmed down again after a short moment of anxiety, like he had just acquired something to make sure everything was right!

[What is going on?]

Suddenly, a dense mass of fog which contained rolling spiritual qi suddenly rushed out from Ye Xiao's arms. Everybody was covered by the fog all of a sudden. They couldn't even see their own fingers again.

"The third layer is opened!"

Ye Shangxin shouted excitedly.

It had been a long time since somebody opened it the last time. However, Li Chongshan and Ye Shangxin still remembered what it looked like when it was opened.

Ye Xiao withdrew his hand, in which there was a black ring in the palm. Nobody saw it.

It was quite simple to open the entrance though. Behind the fog, there was a small hole. He just put his hand into the hole and touched a ring before wringing it... That was it. The third layer was opened.

However, it took him a long time to find the ring... He just didn't touch it!

When he felt it had taken too long and he still couldn't touch anything, he got nervous. He started to operate East-rising Purple qi with both his hands and fluttered his hands. Surprisingly, the ring came into his hand itself...

He wrung it and the entrance was opened.

He was totally blank about what just happened. He told them he could get in because he was lying!

He just wanted to get in and check what the secret was.

It turned out he had won a lottery.

[Could it be a connection between this Heaven Treasure Mountain and my East-rising Purple Qi?]

Suddenly, a door was slowly opening in the dense fog. Han Bingxue didn't hesitate and stepped into it. Ye Xiao got in after him.

Ye Clan's ten people saw the door opening and hurriedly walked into it. The last of them seemed intentionally standing at the entrance for a longer time than he needed.

It pissed the Li Clan people off so much. They were raging up with filthy words coming out from their mouths.

In fact, they were doing something useless.

In the third layer, the fog was so dense that even if there was a man standing in front, one might not recognize his face.

When the door of the third layer was opened, waves of the sounds of beasts roaring came over to them like thunderclaps.

Han Bingxue's face changed. He hurriedly drew out his sword and held it tight in hand. - Clang! -

Who was Han Bingxue, a muddle-headed man in front of Ye Xiao and Xuan Bing, but actually one of the real powerful figures in Qing-Yun Realm. He was brilliant in both experience and eyesight. The roar of the beasts sounded in rhythm. Whatever made such a sound were absolutely not just some ordinary spiritual beasts. If he had to fight one, he wouldn't worry at all. However, what terrified him most was that there seemed to be more than one, or a few... It seemed like there was a crowd!

How could he not panic when he realized what was ahead of

them?

...

Chapter 1032: Beasts Off

The twenty men behind Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were all terrified. They were not as knowledgeable as Han Bingxue, but after all, they had come to the Mountain of All Medicines many times, which gave them essential knowledge about survival. They were not sure about the beasts' level, but they could tell from the sound that there were lots of beasts, at least a hundred!

According to their own experience, the beasts should all be in high levels, above level six.

A crowd of spiritual beasts that had such an overwhelming power was definitely not a bunch of Dream Origin Stage cultivators could handle.

Han Bingxue listened carefully and realized how bad it was. From the fierceness, he could feel many beasts beyond level eight. He had no idea exactly how many there were. He just knew that he was not able to handle this situation!

A few men of the Li Clan people, who were at the back of the group, still stood at the entrance. They heard the roar and got frightened, so they ran back to the second layer fast.

They got out of the door, yet those who were in the third layer couldn't get away anymore because the door was closed.

"As recorded in the history of Ye Clan, the door can only be opened two hours after it is closed." Ye Shangxin's voice seemed to be trembling. He was quite nervous as sweat permeated his hands.

"Prepare for a fights, guys. This is not going to go easy. Be careful!"

- Clang, clang... -

Sounds of weapons rang up.

People of Ye Clan stood in the shape of a triangle. Li Clan people

seemed awkward. There should be ten of them, but the four of them at the back near the door fled away when they heard the sound of the beasts.

It was reasonable that they chose to save their own lives when the danger came, but their escape hurt the six men left inside the third layer.

The six of them were all pale on the faces!

"Traitors! Cowards! Disobedient!" Li Chongshan scolded angrily.

There was certainly anger in his voice, but there were also fear and regret. It seemed he was regretting it so much. [Why would I get so deep into this place... Now I can't go out no matter how much I want to.]

The beasts sounded closer and closer as a cold qi abruptly rose. It was Han Bingxue who was pouring his cold ice qi into his precious sword. His vigor greatly rose up as the spiritual qi rushed out from the sword. Apparently, he was ready to make the first move.

At this moment...

"Meow?" A weak voice of a cat suddenly sounded.

It was so abrupt. Everybody was quite tense and was surprised by the meow.

[Eh? How come there is a cat in such a dangerous place?]

[A cat wants to meow, then it meows. Since it can live in this place, it must have its own way to live. But it made a sound like this when we are feeling scared and frightened?]

[Fine. It meows. However, what does that help? That voice!]

[Scaring mice?]

However, unexpectedly, after that meow, the wild roars stopped. It stopped all of a sudden, as if the beasts that were running over all stopped at the same time.

After that...

In the dense fog, a blasting shout sounded from the sky, "Ahh... oh?"

That sounded so overwhelming, as if it was the sound of the king of all animals. As the shout sounded, the fog in the entire place shook and rolled.

Ye Shangxin and his men heard the shout, and suddenly, their blood was like boiling in the veins. They couldn't stop staggering.

They were all stunned. [What level is this beast? That was just a shout. We actually couldn't handle it, even though we are all above level six of Dream Origin Stage?]

They all focused on how powerful the sound was but couldn't understand what that shout meant. In that shout, there was a quiver.

It seemed the beast was asking something?

It seemed to be frightened.

That was a terrified query from a lower-position being to an upper-position one!

"Meow..." The cat's voice sounded again.

- Puff, puff, puff, puff... -

- Boom, boom, boom... -

It seemed a few beasts fell down, and then the crowd of beasts burst into panic and chaos. After a while, lots of beasts started to run.

They were running back to where they came from after turning around. They ran farther into the third layer like running for their lives.

It seemed there was something too powerful for them to resist on the direction they were running to at the beginning, as if they

would die if they didn't run away soon!

The overwhelming and fierce atmosphere that was created by the crowd of powerful spiritual beasts suddenly disappeared.

The only thing that was left in the dense fog was the smell of urine...

It seemed many of those beasts pissed because they were too scared... or maybe more than just piss...

That was excretion from back and front at the same time!

After that, the beast crowd was gone. They left faster than they came. In fact, it was times faster. Apparently, the beasts were spending their life energy to run, trying their best to get away from this place!

It was just a few seconds, yet it all returned to silence. Everything was calmed.

The danger came and left so abruptly. It was such a shocking experience. The ten Ye Clan people and the six Li Clan people all looked at each other. Apparently, none of them realized what exactly had happened.

However, from the urine smell that was left behind by the beast crowd, they started to guess... [Is it... A bunch of beasts came here... just to relieve themselves like this is their toilet?]

[Then they just left?]

[Why is it so smelly if it isn't...]

[Why were they running so fast... Was it the smell?]

[But... isn't this an absurd explanation?]

No matter how calm and steady Ye Shangxin used to be, he was now lost in confusion. He kept rubbing the back of his head as he said, "What... What is going on?"

Nobody answered him. They all stayed in silence with their eyes

widely opened.

Even Han Bingxue was stunned. He heard the voice of a cat and he knew it was Erhuo. He knew that Erhuo was an extraordinary cat, but in his heart, it was just a cat. He couldn't connect a cat and a running beast crowd in any way. He was lost too!

"The danger is gone. Let's just move on quickly. It won't help to just stand here." Ye Xiao's voice sounded lazily. "In this layer, it is incredibly wide. We don't have a clear and good view in this place. Let's spread out and search for the materials. I guess you have some ways to tell one medicine from another even though you can't see... especially some special methods to distinguish the Regeneration Ink Lotus from other plants..."

...

Chapter 1033: Summon

"Naturally." Ye Shangxin said, "Men of Ye Clan, come here. Stand in line. Count off!"

"One, Ye Le... Three, Ye Shuijia... Four, Ye Yuan..."

The other nine men of Ye Clan weren't neglectful. They started to do as Ye Shangxin said.

"Do as we practiced earlier. Eight sides in a circle. Two in the middle. One group goes to the left. One man focuses on leaving signs and smells. Two hours later, no matter how many materials you have, you should all retreat and get together here. Do not violate my order."

"Yes!"

Ye Clan people moved to the left, rolling the fog away.

"Brother Ye, we share the same name after all. Why don't you join us?" Ye Shangxin asked, in the dense fog.

"Thanks. But I guess I would rather do it myself. I am used to be alone. I don't like to do things with a bunch of people. After all, it may effect your circle. It may be bad for you, and it certainly won't satisfy me," Ye Xiao said.

Ye Shangxin took a breath of relief and said, "Take care."

Then he left.

To be honest, deep in his heart, he didn't want Ye Xiao to say yes. The Ye Clan team had practiced the searching position array so many times. If Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue joined them, it would cause negative effects.

Besides, this place didn't provide a good view. Things would only go much worse.

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue chose not to join them. It was the best for the Ye Clan team.

Since Ye Clan headed left, Li Clan surely went right. Li Chongshan invited Ye Xiao to join them too, but Ye Xiao turned it down as well.

"Go on. Two hours later, come back here."

Then they spread out.

"What should we do, Boss? The fog is tricky. No matter how I try to focus with my eyes, even if I fill spiritual energy into my eyes, I can't see clearly. I don't think you can see any better, do you?" Han Bingxue asked, standing in the dense fog.

"We are moving ahead," Ye Xiao answered.

The fog was more than just tricky. Ye Xiao had used Yin Yang Eyes, which was known as a method that allowed him to see through everything in the world. However, it didn't work in the fog. Ye Xiao was in a low level, but he could even see through the red and white clouds earlier. Yet it became totally useless in this place! This was too weird!

Yin Yang Eyes was a super martial art that originated from East-rising Purple Qi. He never failed when using it. It stunned Ye Xiao when it failed here. However, after being disappointed, he became hopeful again. When he operated the East-rising Purple Qi, it sensed something. Even though Yin Yang Eyes didn't work, East-rising Purple Qi did. He sensed something ahead of them that kept attracting him.

"Boss, don't you want to search for medicines?" Han Bingxue was confused about what Ye Xiao was doing.

"Why should I? What medicines here can be valuable enough for me to bother?" Ye Xiao talked back through mind connection, "Do you really think I am muddle-headed? If I want to get medical materials, do you think I have to come to this place?"

"Urh..." Han Bingxue sniffed. He smelled the attractive scent of medicines, but he shook his head and sighed.

[He came here where there are all kinds of medicines, yet he isn't here for the medicines...]

[So many medicines... This is touching... I want to get some so badly!]

Don't doubt it. Han Bingxue was indeed a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator, one of the most powerful cultivators in the realm, however, he didn't belong to any sect. He was poor. Even though he couldn't see the medicines, he could smell it. He knew that the medicines must be aged and valuable. If he could, he would definitely collect a big amount of them. However, being suppressed by Ye Xiao, he had to quit the idea!

Erhuo quietly got out from inside Ye Xiao's clothes. It slowly walked ahead, waving its tails in an elegant way.

The fog covered it.

If Han Bingxue could see through the fog, he would definitely find Erhuo stretching in the front, waving its tail. It was looking around with its two round and bright eyes, with disdain in the eyes, like a king inspecting its kingdom.

- Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

Wherever it went over, countless small animals fled away from the bush, the trees, the flowers, and other plants, as if they saw an ancient giant beast.

Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. He followed the heels of Erhuo, walking carefully.

He wouldn't want to step on Erhuo and accidentally kill this little cat who was never growing up...

Han Bingxue was like a dumbhead goose following Ye Xiao. He was quite good at cultivation after all. Even though he didn't see anything, he could hear the wind and tell their position. He stayed with Ye Xiao easily, but he didn't know what they were going to do. He just shouted from time to time, "Oh! I stepped on

something... Let me see... Holy heavens... I stepped on a ginseng every two steps... That is a huge ginseng... must be aged enough..."

"Oh... Wait... This is... Let me touch it... Holy shxt... An Ink Jade Ganoderma... It is a hundred years old..."

"Wait... I got something again... That's smooth and soft... What is it? Let me touch it... What the hell... Let me smell it... Holy heavens! Who the fxck sick took a poo in this place... Holy hell that is gross..."

"Oh... What is this again? Forget it... I won't touch it..."

Ye Xiao kept walking ahead and sighing.

[Who would believe that this gossip and rude talky-body... is actually the man who was known as a handsome, elegant, and charming gentleman, the Frost Sword, Han Bingxue?]

[Who could guess it right for the first sight, I am willing to bet with my 'thing'...]

[Which part of him is elegant? He is totally not even close.]

[This is so...]

After walking straight forward for a long time, they were still in a white dense fog. They had lost their direction. Erhuo took a turn at the same spot and then raised its ears.

"Meow, meow, meow, oh, oh..."

Its voice was clear and strong. It shouted three times and then stopped to comb itself with one of its paws. It seemed it was waiting for a response.

After a while, a tiger roar echoed from afar.

"Howl, oh..."

After a while, somewhere far from them, a huge animal jumped down to the ground and then ran over to them fast.

"Holy hell!" Han Bingxue drew out his long sword which he had

just put back to the scabbard. "There is a big guy coming. Only one. I can handle it. Boss, be careful. I need to fight with all effort. I don't think I can protect you at the same time..."

Erhuo turned its head and stared at Han Bingxue, as if it was looking at a piece of sh*t.

...

Chapter 1034: Asking For Direction

Han Bingxue couldn't see Erhuo's eyes, but he could feel that in the dense fog, Erhuo was staring at him with eyes full of disdain.

"Meow..." Erhuo humphed. 'This Han Bingxue boy is truly a retard! Can you truly protect my master? Are you overestimating yourself? Do you think they are our enemies? They are my underlings! Look at you, nervous like hell. And they say you are famous... Pah!' That was what Erhuo meant.

"Boss, what did it say? Is it speaking ill of me?" Han Bingxue asked discontentedly.

Stupid or not, he was sensitive to such a feeling, so he asked!

Ye Xiao tried not to laugh and he said, "You think too much. It just wants to exchange names with you. From now on, the cat is Han Bingxue and you are Erhuo [1]. I think it is a good idea. Look at its white hair. It is white like snow, clearer than snow. It won't disgrace your name. Its name Erhuo suits you perfectly too. Don't you think?"

"Fxck!" Han Bingxue was so angry.

[Damn you! Your cat is bullying me! You as its master is bullying me too! You think you are great because you are the boss?]

[Fine. You are great. But you can't bully people like this!]

Suddenly, a blood-stench swept over with fierceness. A huge being had come near in a short time. Although they couldn't see the face of the animal, and couldn't tell what kind of beast it was, they could feel that it was huge like a mountain.

It was like a mountain with murderous qi.

It felt like that.

Ye Xiao didn't care much. He just stood there with his arms crossed on the chest, waiting for the next move. He naturally

understood what was going on.

Erhuo was making a weak and gentle voice, "Meow? Meow? Meow ah?"

The unknown fierce beast answered, "Ohhh... Roar... Hoh... Ah."

Erhuo, "Meow? Meow, meow?"

The beast, "Oh, wow, wow..."

"Meow."

"Aw..."

"Meowm meow..."

"Aw ohm oh..."

Then they finished talking. The beast was slowly moving backward and said, "Wow, oh, oh?"

"Meow!"

- Shoot! -

It was the blood-stench again...

That beast suddenly disappeared at an unbelievable speed. If they could see it, they would see a huge white tiger, which was over a thousand feet tall, with all its body soaked with sweat...

It wasn't sweating because of tiredness... It was sweating because of fear...

[Holy heavens! That scared the shxt out of me!]

Han Bingxue widely opened his eyes. Although he heard what they were talking, he didn't understand a word. "Is it... talking to that beast?"

Ye Xiao said, "It is not you talking to the beast, apparently."

Han Bingxue was curious, "What did Erhuo say? Do you know, Boss?"

Ye Xiao said, "Nothing serious. It's just asking for directions. Do

you need me to translate for you?"

Han Bingxue was even more curious, "You know cat language? Come on! Show me!"

Ye Xiao was pleased. He said, "Somebody! Come! I need a direction!"

Han Bingxue was stunned. "What? Boss? Who are you talking to?"

Ye Xiao stared at him and shouted, "What do you mean who I am talking to? I am translating Erhuo's words. That is what it said first! It's calling for somebody! Don't make any stupid guess again, will you?"

Han Bingxue staggered. He nearly fell down to the floor, speaking with a twisted face, "Fine. I get it. That's domineering! Quite domineering! What next?"

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Second? Forget it. Let me just go through all of it. Listen carefully and don't interrupt. What Erhuo said after the first was 'Where is the way? Where should I go?' And then the beast said 'way to where?' Erhuo said 'to the fourth layer.' The beast, 'Just right ahead of you. Take a turn there and you will smell something nice. When you do, you turn right. That is where you are going.' Erhuo went on asking, 'How far is it? Tell me more!' The beast, 'About three hundred miles. Not very far.' Erhuo said, 'You d*ckhead! Why are you as stupid as this man beside me? Three hundred miles and you think it is not far?' The beast seemed ashamed, 'I am wrong. You are right. You are absolutely right.'"

Ye Xiao hadn't finished yet, but Han Bingxue was already astonished. Han Bingxue gritted his teeth and asked, "What next then?"

"Then Erhuo said 'Ok.' The beast answered, 'Great!' Then the beast left, 'Can I go now, boss?' Erhuo said, 'Piss the fxck off. You are more annoying than Han Bingxue. Such a d*ck...' The beast

seemed happy and it said, 'Luckily, I am not Han Bingxue. Just give me a word and I will smash Han Bingxue into a piece of shxt.' Erhuo said, 'Get away! Do not make me sick. A Han Bingxue is enough to make me look stupid. With you, do you think I still have a second of relief? Just go away!' So the beast just left... happily..."

He finished the whole story, nodded, and said, "That's it. Any questions? Anything you don't understand?"

Han Bingxue gritted his teeth and spoke with a pale face, "No! I understand all! I never knew that you not only know cat language, but also the spiritual beast language... Now I realize you are already such an advanced person who is like some rare special spiritual beasts..."

Ye Xiao spoke with a smile, "That's flattering. I will remember your word. I will keep it in mind. I know for you, who are even worse than animals, this is quite a strike in the head. Just take your time and accept it."

Han Bingxue looked upset and started to sigh.

[This is getting even harder.]

[Boss is better and better at humiliating people.]

[The two beasts shouted at each other for some reason and then he actually made up a story to humiliate me out of it...]

[How brilliant!]

[I never noticed he had such talent. People change when time passes. That's so typical!]

In fact, even though Ye Xiao didn't translate the conversation in a nice way, he didn't lie about even one word. He didn't even exaggerate it.

Erhuo did say those words.

The white tiger did say those words too... It was all real...

Erhuo finally got the right direction. It didn't hesitate, just ran

out to it.

...

[1] Erhuo(二货) means fool in Chinese.

Chapter 1035: Nine-layer Valley Awaits Monarch

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were walking at the back. In the dense fog, they couldn't see, so they didn't know how far they had traveled. They had at least walked in the fog for an hour before they smelled something like musk.

After they took a turn, Erhuo stopped.

Ye Xiao still couldn't see things. He reached out his hands and Erhuo just tactfully jumped back to his hand. When it jumped on his hand, it felt a bit different than Ye Xiao expected. When he touched Erhuo in the hand, he realized Erhuo just jumped back from a stair. It was a bit higher than he expected, so it felt different.

On the stair, there was a door.

The door was the only thing that wasn't covered by the fog in the third layer so far. It was the only thing they saw in this layer!

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue stared at the door. It was not gold or wood, but they both could feel the toughness of it. They knew that no weapons, no matter how sharp, could break the door.

Ye Xiao stood right in front of the door and operated the East-rising Purple Qi in full power.

The fog started to roll fast all of a sudden. The martial art changed the status of the fog, made it like a boiling rice soup, rolling and whirling.

Ye Xiao reached his hand ahead and touched the door for a while. As expected, he found a hole that he could put his hand into.

He didn't hesitate as he slowly put in his hand which was covered by the energy of purple qi.

When his hand entered the hole, he felt something was rising

from beneath the earth, rushing over to his hand. It felt like... whatever it was, it must be in a hurry.

Ye Xiao felt cold in the hand and then realized it was a ring again.

He tried twisting it to the left, yet it didn't move a bit. Then he twisted to the right, and something was moving. - Crack -

The ring rotated half round and the door suddenly disappeared.

The eyes of the two men and one cat lit up at the same time.

It seemed every layer of the Mountain of All Medicines was arranged differently from the prior layer. The first layer was filled with dense fog, so nobody could see anything in it. The second layer was clear. They could see everything. The third layer was foggy again and they were blind in the fog. When they reached the fourth layer, they could see again.

The fourth layer was definitely much more beautiful than the second.

Besides, it was much broader than the second layer too!

Ye Xiao thought, [I am right. The higher, the broader.]

[As it can be seen, it seems nobody ever entered this place before... Such a mysterious land...]

[I wonder if there are much more dangerous beings? Can Erhuo take care of it?]

Erhuo was the 'primal spirit in chaos', and it seemed it overwhelmed the beasts they met earlier, but the fourth layer was a new world. Erhuo was still at such a young age. Could it overwhelm the beasts in this layer like the third layer?

It was doubtful and he felt emotional, but when he opened the door, he still stepped into it without hesitation!

The worst thing to do was hesitating. He had gone this far. The only thing he should do was to keep going ahead!

Han Bingxue saw Ye Xiao enter the door, so he didn't hesitate either.

They both saw a tree of cinnabar fruit near the door. Lots of purple-red fruits were hanging on the tree.

When they took a closer look, they saw the fruits glaring with colorful glows and they were all spinning. That scene proved that this cinnabar fruit tree must be extraordinary. It should be a priceless treasure of the world!

"Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit!" Han Bingxue was a top-level cultivator of Dao Origin Stage who had a pair of sharp eyes. As he saw it, he recognized it and said it out, "Boss, we are going to be so rich this time... We actually found such a valuable treasure just after opening that door!"

Ye Xiao was calm and steady. He didn't move but just stared at the tree of Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit. He slowly said, "Do not be overjoyed too early... It seems there is something weird behind this scene. The treasure may be right in front of us, but I don't think it is going to be easy to get it!"

Around the cinnabar fruits, there were countless streams of rainbow glowing endlessly, moving around the tree. There was a comforting scent spreading out. However, it seemed Ye Xiao was right. No matter how Han Bingxue took a closer look, he felt that there was such a huge distance from them.

"As expected, there must be something behind it!"

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath. "We should wait."

"Really? Do we have to? It is not quite close, and maybe there is something we don't know yet, but I can go and return within a second with my fast flying martial art. There won't be a problem." Han Bingxue seemed impatient. Before he finished talking, he had stepped out. "The cinnabar fruit..."

The next moment, there was a sound of collision.

An invisible screen instantly rose up and stopped Han Bingxue. He hit the screen so hard and he was actually slammed back hard.

Before the tree of cinnabar fruit tree, a mass of purple qi rose up and formed into a few words in the air.

'Nine-layer Valley Awaits Monarch!'

The words showed up one after another slowly and then stopped.

"Nine-layer Valley awaits monarch?" Han Bingxue stared at the words and said, "What does that mean?" He turned around looking at Ye Xiao and said, "Can I understand it as... this Nine-layer Valley, no matter what it is, has been waiting for you, the Xiao Monarch, to come?"

Ye Xiao frowned and looked back at him speechlessly. "I mean... Bingxue, can you answer a question for me?"

Han Bingxue was surprised. "Boss, are you alright? Why did you talk to me like this? It is too polite! Just go ahead. Ask me whatever you want to. I will tell you everything I know! Go!"

"How many years do you think this mountain has been existing?" Ye Xiao asked.

"I don't think anybody actually knows the exact number... But I guess it should be millions!" Han Bingxue rubbed his head and said, "I don't think anybody alive in Qing-Yun Realm can tell you the specific answer. I can only tell you it is millions. Does it help?"

Ye Xiao looked annoyed. "Yes, of course, it does. You have given me the answer I want. You said it yourself, this mountain is at least one million years old. Now tell me, how are these words written for me? Do you even have a brain in your head? Even if I have been reborn eighty-thousand times, do you think I can be older than this mountain?"

Han Bingxue suddenly lost words. He could think of nothing to argue all of a sudden. However, he was always stubborn and reluctant to admit mistakes or defeats, so he said, "There are lots of

weird things in the world. Maybe there was a god..."

...

Chapter 1036: Transferred Out

"Please, brother, can you shut up. I would rather let you be the boss, okay? Don't we look like gods for those who are looking at us from down there?" Ye Xiao made a long sigh, "I finally see your true face now. The only thing you are good at is being pretentious. Nothing more. Who on earth was so stupid to give you that title? It is such a waste. It ruins the words..."

Han Bingxue was annoyed and felt awkward, but couldn't think of any words to argue. He was speechless.

At this moment, below the words, the rolling purple qi slowly formed a platform, which seemed to be quite solid.

In the center of the platform, there was an obvious handprint.

'Operate the martial art on the hand and put it on the handprint perfectly. Operate the energy in dantian in the number of nine and open the door!'

More words showed up one after another.

"That's easy." Han Bingxue smiled and stepped ahead in a big step. "Let me do it, Boss!"

He wanted to do it, not because he wanted to take the profit it might bring to them, but in fact, he did it in case it was a trap that would challenge Ye Xiao's cultivation capability or something. Ye Xiao was weak. He would very like fail if it was a trap.

Han Bingxue had no idea whether he could pass the challenge or not, but he was surely much tougher than Ye Xiao at the moment.

It was definitely a right thing for him to do after all.

Before Ye Xiao answered, Han Bingxue's hand was already covered by frost. Cold flowing qi was around his hand and he slowly put the hand onto the handprint.

Technically, his hand was a bit bigger than the handprint, but he

could still put his hand on it. "In the number of nine. Well, that must be running it for nine cycles. That's short..."

He started to push the circulation of his inner spiritual power.

The next moment, the cold qi was running wildly inside his body.

However...

"Holy hell!"

Han Bingxue exclaimed.

The platform suddenly glared dazzling purple light that shined the entire world. Ye Xiao felt like he was blind and couldn't see anything anymore. After a while, he heard Han Bingxue exclaim in a terrified voice and then it became silent.

The purple light was twisting as if it met something special...

When he opened his eyes, he found...

Han Bingxue was gone!

Han Bingxue actually disappeared!

[What the hell?]

He was frightened, so he hurriedly looked around to look for Han Bingxue. For him, no matter how mysterious, valuable, and marvelous the platform was, it could never be compared to his brother!

Maybe the platform knew what Ye Xiao was thinking, so the purple qi started to move again and showed a few more words.

'Who pretends to be with qualifications will be banished by heavens!'

Ye Xiao was shocked.

That was obvious... Han Bingxue wasn't qualified, but he did it anyway, so he got banished!

However, no matter how he was banished, it was a good news for

Ye Xiao. At least Han Bingxue was only banished, not killed. He was alive.

That was a good news as long as he was still alive!

Where was he banished to?

That was not important to Ye Xiao, not at this moment at least!

Other than that... Ye Xiao had an idea that was so shocking in his heart... [Is this platform... conscious?]

[Maybe... it can communicate through mind connection to me? It receives my mind?]

[Otherwise, how is this possible?]

After a short time of thought, he turned around and wanted to check if Han Bingxue was banished to the outside of this layer. When he just turned around, he found that the door that he had just opened, the entrance of the fourth layer... had been closed!

In other words, he was locked inside this place alone!

He was stunned. After a while, he took a deep breath and murmured, "According to what Ye Shangxin said, once the door is closed, it will take at least two hours before it will open again. I wonder if it is the same in the fourth layer. Anyway, I will have at least two hours here. Let me bet with my fate! Let's see... whether I am who you have been waiting for... the monarch you await!"

Although he saw it as a bet, he didn't dare to be reckless. He quietly operated the East-rising Purple Qi. The purple qi suddenly rolled up from inside his dantian. Within just a moment, it had run for one circle.

Ye Xiao slowly reached his hand out.

The rolling purple qi covered his entire hand. His hand looked like a crystal purple jade at this moment!

He slowly moved his hand to the purple handprint and put his hand on the handprint little by little...

Outside the mountain.

Ye Clan and Li Clan each took one side.

Ye Tianchen looked worried, with his hands behind the back. Li Clan's senior elder was also nervous.

It was their first time to explore the third layer of Heaven Treasure Mountain. It was something that concerned both of their futures.

The two of them both expected their own disciples could collect more than the other...

While they were waiting with anxiety, they didn't even want to have any row. They just kept waiting quietly.

They were waiting for the result...

Suddenly!

A few figures showed up from the mountain, moving down in frustration.

Four men.

All were Li Clan's men!

The others all looked at the four men.

Ye Tianchen frowned. Li Clan elder raised up his eyebrows.

"What's wrong? Why do you four come out so soon? Did anything happen?" Li Clan elder stood up and asked with a frown.

The four men spoke with a frustrated face, "Yes, you can say that. The young man did open the third layer... But... When the door was just opened, a huge crowd of spiritual beasts raged up inside."

"Beasts crowd? How come?" Ye Tianchen and Li Clan elder both asked.

"Yes. It is. Countless spiritual beasts ran over to the entrance of the third layer. The beast of lowest level is level six. There were lots of supreme spiritual beasts beyond level eight and level nine. It

was difficult for Dao Origin Stage cultivators to defend, not to mention us." Li Clan people was still in fear. This man's face was pale and he said, "We were at the back of the group... We saw how terrible things became, so we quit... Otherwise..."

"What about the others?" Li Clan elder asked.

"I am afraid..." The man answered, "I am afraid... they are gone..."

Ye Tianchen humphed. Li Clan elder humphed too.

They both had the same thought in mind. [How is this possible? Did we just lose the great opportunity?]

On the other side, Xuan Bing, who was wearing all black, blandly said, "What about that white clothed man who stands beside Master Ye?"

She was asking about Han Bingxue.

...

Chapter 1037: Waiting!

At the moment, Xuan Bing talked in an arrogant tone, with the fierceness from a higher position to the lower, looking down on the entire world. Her aura of cruelty and coldness felt like she was freezing the entire Mountain of All Medicines.

Under her overwhelming suppression, the four men didn't have time to think before they blurted out, "We didn't notice anything special about that man... Maybe it just happened too fast so he didn't have time to..."

Xuan Bing humphed and then quietly sat down.

The suppression was all gone abruptly. The others all had endured the suppression, but it didn't last long. The most powerful one among them was Ye Tianchen, who was in level two of Dao Origin Stage. Nobody realized how powerful Xuan Bing exactly was!

However, it meant nothing to Xuan Bing. It wasn't important whether they realized it or not.

For her, she had the answer she wanted, so nothing else mattered!

[Didn't have time to react?]

[If a top-level Dao Origin Stage cultivator didn't have time to react, how could you have time to quit?]

Xuan Bing felt completely relieved when she thought of that.

The truth was obvious. When things went wrong and it became horrible, the four men didn't even try to see what was happening before they fled in fear.

Han Bingxue was loyal to Ye Xiao. If anything dangerous happened, especially when it was so dangerous that even he himself couldn't handle it, he would definitely drag Ye Xiao away!

Since Han Bingxue didn't do that, it meant things weren't out of control! It didn't matter!

It was impossible that the four level three Dream Origin Stage cultivators made it out and Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao couldn't.

Xuan Bing felt relieved.

That was why she was so calm.

However, Ye Clan people and Li Clan people weren't.

They were all nervous and anxious.

Unlike Xuan Bing, Ye Clan and Li Clan people didn't know who Han Bingxue was and how powerful he was. For them, level nine spiritual beasts were some super-beings that could never be defeated. What they were talking about was a crowd of such beasts. It was some powerful creature that could destroy everything. They figured whoever stayed in there must very possible get killed!

"All of them are trapped inside? Oh no..." Nobody dared to talk loud, but hundreds of men whispering still made the scene bustling.

Ye Tianchen, who was the most powerful figure among them, looked at Xuan Bing. He didn't realize how powerful that suppression was, but he could feel something marvelous did happen. He was such an experienced cultivator. When he saw Xuan Bing sitting there peacefully, he felt relieved too. He took a deep breath and said, "Guys, silence. Calm down. It is a blessing by of the heavens to open the entrance to the third layer. This doesn't have to be a dead end. Let's just keep waiting in calmness!"

The Li Clan elder made the same decision.

They were the two eldest people in their clans, who should be calm and steady while facing dangers!

After about an hour, nothing happened.

It had been over two hours since they left for the mountain.

While everybody was waiting in expectation, something happened. Somebody exclaimed in the sky.

When they looked up, they saw a white figure falling about ten thousand meters high from the sky, waving his hands. Before others realized what happened, Xuan Bing had rushed out.

She rushed up high and she was faster than the others could describe. Because she moved so fast, it made a sound of 'shoot' loudly. After seconds, she had reached thousands of meters in height. The next moment, she had already moved to the white figure.

She waved her hand and it held the falling man with a soft but powerful force that lead them to fall down slowly to the ground.

They were falling so slowly so that the damage from the fall would be reduced.

Ye Tianchen and the Li Clan elder were both shocked. Li Clan elder was rubbing his beard when he saw it. He was so shocked that he nearly ripped his own beard off.

[That woman in black actually has such a power... The power she showed when she rushed... the speed... she must be some powerful figure in Qing-Yun Realm!]

Ye Tianchen and the Li Clan elder knew that none of them could do the same!

In other words... they realized this woman was more powerful than either of them.

They figured she was at least level four of Dao Origin Stage!

Suddenly, they were both sweating with fear.

[It is such a good luck that I didn't say anything impolite to the woman...]

[Otherwise, we might all be killed...]

[With her overwhelming power, it won't be hard for her to kill all of us in seconds... Hmm... Not only just us, but also to wipe out Ye Clan and Li Clan thoroughly!]

However, not everybody was focusing on Xuan Bing. Most of them were staring at the man in white clothes. After watching for a while, they realized the man was exactly the man who entered the mountain earlier.

[How come he was falling from the sky? Isn't it too unbelievable? Strange? Weird? Incredible?]

While everybody was confused, Xuan Bing had returned to the ground with Han Bingxue. - Pah! Pah! - She slapped Han Bingxue on the face, who was in a coma.

Han Bingxue was slapped and he immediately regained consciousness. He shook his head but still felt blank. He slowly opened his eyes, looking confused.

Xuan Bing frowned and reached out her hand. Suddenly, a piece of crystal ice appeared in her hand. - Bang! - It hit Han Bingxue on the head. The ice went into his clothes and chilled him up all over the body.

He was provoked and jumped up. He shouted, "You... What the hell... What are you doing?"

Xuan Bing stood in front of him and spoke in a cold voice, "Are you awake now? Say it. What is going on? Why did you fall from the sky?"

Han Bingxue still looked confused. He said, "Hmm... Why would I... Why am I... Right... How did I get out..."

Xuan Bing looked annoyed. She waved one hand and a mass of snow hit Han Bingxue on the face. "Aren't you awake yet? Fine. Let me clear your head up!"

Han Bingxue was freezing again. He finally regained consciousness. He walked closer to Xuan Bing and told her

everything that happened to him and Ye Xiao.

As he was speaking, Xuan Bing's face became darker and darker...

"Wait!"

Xuan Bing looked blank and cold on the face.

...

Chapter 1038: The Fourth Person

It wasn't until this moment that Xuan Bing realized how dangerous the beast crowd was. The beasts were so strong that Han Bingxue alone could never keep Ye Xiao safe. She figured she should have gone with them at the beginning. Besides, she was surprised about Erhuo. [Since when did he have such a strange cat? Why is it so overwhelming?]

The high-level beasts attacking in a crowd, even Xuan Bing would have to retreat. Erhuo actually commanded the beasts! That was amazing!

Now... Ye Xiao was safe, but he might still be in danger later on. The fourth layer of Mountain of All Medicines was somewhere nobody ever entered. According to Han Bingxue's words, 'Nine-layer Vally Awaits Monarch' had two important points. No matter whether Ye Xiao was or not the monarch it was awaiting, it was obvious the mountain had nine layers.

The fourth layer where Ye Xiao stayed at the moment was already somewhere nobody ever reached in the history of Qing-Yun Realm. There were still five more layers upon the fourth. Even though the fourth layer was safe, what about the upper five? Were they all safe?

However, Xuan Bing understood that no matter how angry or anxious she was, it wouldn't help Ye Xiao. In fact, even if she followed him, there was barely anything she could do. She could only get to the third layer. It was the cat who helped Ye Xiao get into the fourth layer. Xuan Bing could never defeat the beast crowd. The fourth layer, as well as the other higher layers, was also a place that was far beyond her capability.

No matter how anxious she was, she could only wait with patience!

...

On the other side, Ye Xiao finally touched the purple handprint.

When he put his hand on the handprint, he found that the handprint was exactly the size of his hand. His hand fit into the handprint perfectly.

He was surprised. The platform suddenly had a strong absorption power.

Ye Xiao felt the energy of East-rising Purple Qi running out to the platform. It reminded him the words 'operate the energy in dantian in the number of nine'. He hurriedly ran the spiritual power inside.

Suddenly, a purple light rushed up on the platform, and it raised Ye Xiao's hand up three inches. It actually created a somewhat purple glow between his hand and the platform, which bonded the hand and the handprint tightly.

Ye Xiao looked closer and he was shocked.

The creases on the handprint were exactly the same with his hand!

That was a perfect handprint of his hand!

Even the creases on every finger were the same with his! There was not even a tiny difference.

Till now, Ye Xiao felt terrified!

Two hands in the same size were not so unbelievable. However, if the creases were the same, it was not a reasonable thing anymore!

As Ye Xiao knew, everybody had different creases on the hand. Nobody had the same hand creases with another in the entire history!

However, there was a handprint with exactly the same creases as his hand.

[This... This is exactly my own handprint!]

[What is going on?]

Ye Xiao started to think. He suddenly remembered what Han Bingxue said. 'Can I understand it as... this Nine-layer Valley, no matter what it is, has been waiting for you, the Xiao Monarch, to come?'

He stared at the purple handprint and started shaking.

[Is it... is it?]

However, even if what Han Bingxue said was right, he was not Xiao Monarch anymore. He was Ye Xiao, and his hand was not the hand of Xiao Monarch!

...

When he was lost in thoughts, two streams of purple qi suddenly ran into each other. The purple qi that rose from the platform started to get into Ye Xiao's hand. The purple qi that came from inside Ye Xiao was pouring into the platform at the same time.

He felt a special power.

The power was withy and pliable. His hand was hit away all of a sudden. It was not connected to the platform anymore.

As his hand left the platform, the purple platform suddenly dispersed and became a mass of rolling purple qi. The handprint, which confused Ye Xiao, disappeared at the same time.

The mass of purple qi from the platform suddenly rushed up to the sky and became a smoke pillar which was over ten meters wide, sticking to the sky.

He had been pouring out energy since he touched the handprint. It didn't last long, but he felt exhausted at the moment. He was sweating and staggering. He was so tired that he wanted to sit down on the floor and gasp for breath.

He firmly stood and took a deep breath, running the martial art to recover himself.

When he was trying to recover himself, where the platform appeared and disappeared, the dense purple qi started to show up again. More words were showing up in the air.

When he saw the first few words, he knew that what was going to happen would astonish him so much.

'The fourth person, are you ready?'

These were the first several words.

Ye Xiao frowned and looked at the words. He was lost. He had no idea what it meant.

It seemed to be a simple question if not for the special environment he stayed in. When people were doing one job, and the first three men all failed... then he was the fourth. That was easy to understand. 'Are you ready?' That was reasonable too since the first three failed!

However, it was a different story when he was in such a weird situation!

That was ridiculous!

Why was he the fourth person? The fourth person to do what? Those were the two main questions.

That handprint was exactly the same with his handprint. That was impossible to explain already!

Did the three more men before him have the same handprints with that purple handprint?

That was beyond human recognition!

Even if he was the fourth person and it was his destiny, what should he do? There were three men who failed the task, then it must be a difficult task. Was he able to get it done?

He was always brave and bold. Even when he was dying in the previous life, he never felt scared. However, at this moment, he felt terrified. He was shaking!

That was human instinct to fear the unknown. He knew that there was something existing, but he just didn't know what it was. He knew that it must be something he couldn't handle. It was reasonable that he felt scared!

'Nine-layer Valley has come through nine vicissitudes. Finally, you are here.' The words kept showing up. When the new words showed up, the previous ones disappeared. When the third line was up, the first line had vanished. The first word of the second line started to blur.

...

Chapter 1039: Master Tianji

'The first three layers are arranged for human's benefits. It is also a trial for human limits. After the three layers, whoever attempts to enter the fourth layer would have to accept a handprint test. If he or she fails to match the handprint, he or she will be sent away immediately. After that, the entire Nine-layer Valley will leave this world until the next time.'

'This is the ninth world.'

'We have been waiting for such a long time to find you, until finally, you came.'

'This is the answer I can give you that may solve the puzzle in your heart.'

The words slowly showed up and disappeared one after another. It gave Ye Xiao a feeling like there was a man sitting in front of him and patiently telling him a story.

It was neither too dilatory or too fast. It just felt so calm and peaceful. There was no impetuosity nor any other emotions.

It did answer the question in his heart. It also explained the story of this Nine-layer Valley.

[It has happened eight times before. That means eight people failed. Why am I the fourth?]

[Who is the creator of all this? Who has such incredible capability?] He was confused again.

'You must be curious about who I am.' More words were showing up. It was actually responding to Ye Xiao's question. 'I haven't mentioned my name for a long time. However, people used to call me Master Tianji. You can call me the same.'

Ye Xiao was frightened! His face looked full of fear!

[This man must have created this platform millions or perhaps

even billion years ago. However, it feels like he is talking to me right now. It is answering every question in my heart! It predicted my thoughts!]

[How wise is that?]

Thinking about how wise Master Tianji was, Ye Xiao felt weak and cold, as if he had no secrets in front of that man! And that man wasn't even around!

If Master Tianji was standing in front of him, how much could he see through Ye Xiao?

How could such a person exist in the world?

He was a man from tens of millions of years earlier.

Ye Xiao was lost. He didn't dare to imagine more.

'You may guess me wrong. You are making me too powerful. You may think that I can see through your mind even though I have been living a long time earlier. In fact, I am not as powerful as you think.'

The words showed up. 'For us, it is not such a powerful move to just fold a period of time. You may find it difficult to understand. Let me explain in another way. We can easily fold the period between ten thousand years ago and the present time. By doing so, I can fold your world to ten thousand years ago, or bring the world ten thousand years ago to the present.'

Ye Xiao's mouth twisted. He was speechless.

[Come on, bro. This is worse than no explanation. If you didn't explain it, I could imagine it myself. I can give it a fair explanation according to what I know. Now that you have explained it with something so beyond my recognition, that made me more scared of you. Are you sure you are not showing off?]

'I can absolutely explain it in a more difficult way and you may probably become more lost. There is a big difference between your

view and mine. You can't understand the time folding theory, because nobody in your universe has such a heaven-breaking powerful cultivator. Once your universe acquire a super cultivator who is as powerful as the first three men who were chosen, it will become solid and stable. Except the super cultivator himself, nobody else can do anything to change the status of your universe.'

'All in all... you are still in a universe which is still too weak. If you want your universe to be stronger, it all depends on you. For now, you are the fourth person. I am hopeful that you can be a powerful figure who dominates.'

'Don't doubt it. In other worlds, there is a man who is just like you. However, it depends on who among you can make it to the last. I hope you can be faster than the other guy and win the competition!'

...

Ye Xiao felt chilled.

He now roughly understood what was happening.

Even though he didn't clearly get it, he could make a close guess.

Master Tianji did make this platform a long long time earlier. He also left the words when he made this platform.

It was a surprise that he could leave some words that would show up after such a long time. However, what was more surprising was that the words he left actually answered Ye Xiao's questions in his mind. In another word, Master Tianji knew what he would ask after a long time.

Master Tianji didn't miss any detail.

He did even explain something Ye Xiao didn't think of but should have.

The wisdom of Master Tianji was terrifying Ye Xiao!

No words could describe his wisdom.

Maybe Tianji [1] was the only word that could represent him!

'Let's not waste time. Let me introduce you the valley.' The word showed up line after line, like a letter to a close friend. It slowly presented Master Tianji's words to Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao felt warm that he could only feel from a close friend. However, when he realized it, he was scared.

[Holy heavens. We haven't even met each other but you make me feel close? That is insane...]

[This must be some trick!]

[Besides... I feel like I have heard of this name somewhere before... Tianji?]

[Where did I hear of it? I must have heard of it. I just can't remember...]

He didn't have time to relive the memory. The words didn't wait. If he missed a word or two, he might miss a great lot. He decided to be concentrated!

'The appearance of Nine-layer Valley was an unexpected incident. Me and my brother had fought against our chief and rested somewhere together. By accident, we leaked out some primal living spiritual qi... Years later, when I returned to this place, I found it became something we never could imagine. Man can never predict the move of heavens. Things always change. Since this happened, it must have a reason in the world.'

...

[1] Tianji, (天机), god's will or nature's mystery.

Chapter 1040: Real Trial Begins

'So I locked this mountain, and for some special reason, it became a secret reserve project.'

'After more years, me and my brother have become as powerful as heavens. This reserve project was meaningless to us. However, even though it is useless to us, it still has a certain use. At least it must be useful for the new people who we wanted to train.'

'We are all so busy though. We don't have time to do more arrangements in this place, so we just changed the structures of this mountain a little bit and put it into use. As long as the mountain doesn't fall, it will grow itself.'

Ye Xiao felt stricken.

[Holy shxt. Can't you stop being arrogant like this? Mountain of All Medicines, a treasure to all people in Qing-Yun Realm, is just something useless to you? It's not even as useful as a game? It is meaningless?]

[Rest... leaked some primal living spiritual qi?]

[What is that? Is it good?]

[You are all busy? You don't have time to do more? So you just changed the structure a little bit?]

[Why don't you just say that you blew it and it was done?]

...

'Things in the first three layers are all some normal medical materials. They are mostly useless. That's why we keep it open to everybody. As long as you are capable enough, you can go take whatever you want. The fourth layer is the beginning of the real trial.'

'Of course, the fourth layer is only an authentication process. As long as you pass it, you own the fourth layer. However... the fifth

is coming. It all depends on your own fate.'

'When you enter the other five layers, you will understand what I truly have left you. You will truly understand that I am being honest to say that it is useless to us but greatly useful to you!'

'Nine-layer Valley... is actually nine layers of heavens...'

The last thing appeared was an ellipsis. The words were gone.

Purple qi suddenly rushed up and became a dense fog in the sky. Then it was all gone.

It disappeared so abruptly! It was just gone so clearly!

When the purple qi was gone, the entire fourth layer was clearly shown in Ye Xiao's sight.

That was enormous...

When Ye Xiao took a look at the scene in front of him, he nearly passed out.

...

In the third layer, Ye Clan and Li Clan both got a huge harvest. What satisfied them most was that...

The third layer had so many spiritual beasts hanging around, many of which were beyond level nine. However, they didn't attack anybody.

The beasts would only stand around and watch them collect the materials, or just walk away.

However, they all kept the two hours restraint in mind. They, of course, did want to get more medicines, but the door would open after two hours. They knew that if they stayed here longer, the more likely they would encounter danger. Even though the beasts seemed friendly, what if they changed? They would never risk their lives to just get more medicines. It would be such a shame to die in the beasts' belly just because of their greediness.

Two hours was such a short time.

They had such a great opportunity. There were countless medicines right there for them, yet they didn't have time to collect them. What a tragedy!

That was why everybody was working so hard, taking every second they had to collect as many as they could.

There were lots of medicines but limited time...

Ye Clan had nearly twice the number of men than Li Clan, so they were taking all advantages, occupying all the good spots. Li Clan people were angry, but none of them dared to say anything.

The situation was obvious to everybody.

Ye Clan people were never nice to Li Clan. If Li Clan people resisted, Ye Clan people would start the fight immediately!

They would leave six dead bodies of Li Clan in this place.

Li Clan people would never give them the reason to do it. However, even though there were lots of medicines, there were not many Regeneration Ink Lotus among them. Nearly all lotuses were in Ye Clan's pocket.

When Ye Clan people looked at Li Clan people, their eyes were filled with hostility.

Two hours nearly passed, and they were all gathering toward the entrance.

Ye Shangxin kept his hands behind the back as he casually walked to Li Changshan. He talked to Li Chongshan in the attitude from high to low, "Li Chongshan, I saw you collect a few Regeneration Ink Lotus. We have known each other for a long time. We won't push you too hard. Just give me ten of your lotuses and we can go out together peacefully. What do you say?"

Li Chongshan nearly spat out a mouthful of blood. He shouted with his eyes widely opened, "Ten? Why don't you just rob it! You

occupied all the good spots in this area. We have only collected eleven Regeneration Ink Lotus! Now you are asking for ten? What are you thinking? Go back to your dream!"

Ye Shangxin waved his hand and said, "Eleven indeed? Great! Leave them all! Guys, do it!"

Ye Clan people gathered over, staring at Li Clan people deliberately.

"Wait!" Li Chongshan's voice changed.

"Hmm. Brother Li, I guess you don't want to fight either, right?" Ye Shangxin smiled, showing his Snow White teeth. He was so happy.

Li Chongshan looked so wretched. He was stressed.

...

People who were waiting outside the mountain kept looking up at the sky... Finally...

On the hillside, over a dozen figures showed up from nothing!

"They are here! They are back!" somebody cheered.

Twenty-two men including Han Bingxue had entered the mountain. Five had already returned, and now many had returned. None of them died. It was always a good thing that everybody was safe, even if they collected nothing!

Ye Clan forefather Ye Tianchen looked quite satisfied. "Good! Ten good men. All made it back. Hahaha..." He turned to the Li Clan elder and said with a smile, "You are good too. Ten men left, ten men back. Nobody died."

Li Clan elder nearly spat out blood on Ye Tianchen's face because of anger.

None of the two clans lost any man. All the twenty men made it out unharmed. However, they all knew what happened in the third layer!

Li Clan's ten people were all back too, but... the four of them ran away in advance!

...

Chapter 1041: Ye Clan's Good Harvest

Li Clan had much less men than Ye Clan, yet they still made it back safely!

Ye Clan would never quit starting a fight under such circumstances, except for one possibility. Li Chongshan submitted and gave up most of the profits...

The winner who had gained much more was Ye Clan!

Li Clan did get something, but definitely nothing truly valuable.

"You four useless fools!" The Li Clan elder stared at the four people who had fled out. He was so angry.

The four men apparently understood why. They were shaking with pale faces in fear.

It would be a better situation for them if the others all died inside the mountain.

Now, however, they were definitely going to be punished.

Ye Clan people returned in happiness and cheers.

On the other side, Li Clan's six men looked so sad like their parents were dead!

"Oh? You're all back? What about my little friend Ye?" Ye Tianchen frowned. He eventually realized something was wrong and stopped smiling. "What happened to him? Where is he?"

Everybody was stunned.

[That's right! Why only us? Where is the man who took us in?]

They had been lost in happiness and sadness, so none of them noticed that someone was missing.

They didn't really feel so bad about it, except Ye Tianchen and Li Clan elder. They might not take it seriously if they didn't know Xuan Bing's true power. Now that they knew she had such a

horrible power, the thought of her wiping out both clans at once couldn't be erased. Yet the man she cared and tried to protect actually was left behind...

The two old men looked at Xuan Bing. She was standing far away with Han Bingxue, looking solemn, as if she didn't see the cheerful return of the cultivators, yet she didn't seem to have the desire to accuse anybody.

Both of them were in high level. They didn't need to care about what the others thought about. Xuan Bing was sure Ye Xiao was safe after she talked to Han Bingxue. She knew that he had entered the fourth layer. The worse thing that could happen to Ye Xiao was to be banished out. Otherwise, it would be a huge blessing that might help him dominate a land in this world if he could meet some great opportunity inside.

What she could do was wait.

Han Bingxue looked badly hurt. Apparently, he got beaten up quite hard by Xuan Bing because he didn't do well in protecting Ye Xiao.

When Xuan Bing was beating up Han Bingxue, she didn't care if anybody else saw it. The fierceness she showed had scared the men of both Ye Clan and Li Clan. Most of them only thought that she was a cruel woman who mistreated her own friend!

Ye Tianchen and the Li Clan elder knew more than that. When they watched her punching Han Bingxue, they were frightened!

Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue were both so strong that they actually looked normal. In fact, everything that showed their real strength was hidden, which made them look like normal cultivators. Ye and Li, the two old men, knew that Xuan Bing was more powerful than themselves. When she was beating Han Bingxue, it looked fierce but she was just making flesh wounds.

When Han Bingxue was beaten, his body automatically operated

the energy to protect him. However, his power didn't work when facing Xuan Bing's marvelous power. She could beat him wherever she wanted! Nothing stopped her even a bit!

The two old men didn't know how powerful Xuan Bing exactly was, but they knew she was horrible. They knew she must be more horribly powerful than Han Bingxue, even though Han Bingxue was already more powerful than they could recognize.

After that, the two old men didn't even dare to look at Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue in the eyes.

"Go!"

The Li Clan elder shouted with a dark and cold face. He rushed away on his horse to lead his men out.

The time, Ye Clan had gotten most of the benefits. The biggest problem was that they lost the man who could lead them into the third layer...

Li Clan's plan failed.

They only had one choice at last.

That was why he left without hesitation.

There was more than one reason why he would leave so decisively. Things had become complicated in this place now. Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue were both super powerful cultivators, either of them could defeat both Ye Clan and Li Clan at once. If they raged up and started a fight...

That would be a disaster for either clan.

[You Ye Clan have taken all the benefits. You should take the troubles too. Just go on with the Ye boy now!]

...

Not only Li Clan wanted to leave, but also Ye Tianchen.

However, looking at Li Clan's men leaving, he was lost in

thoughts. He didn't leave.

He didn't dare to!

He truly didn't dare!

Li Clan had made a great contribution to Ye Clan this time. They left because they were furious about it. It made sense. However, what about Ye Clan? Ye Clan had gotten a great number of materials. They even took most of the materials from Li Clan. Besides, he had favorably talked to Ye Xiao first so many times. If he chose to leave now, he might get himself killed!

Ye Tianchen tried to see the real power of Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue and came to a conclusion—beyond imagination. If they wanted to wipe out Ye Clan, it would be just a piece of cake!

How dare he recklessly take a move to leave at this moment?

"My lady, we have lost connection to young Brother Ye, but it may not be a bad thing for him. Maybe he is having a great blessed opportunity... By the way, instead of just waiting here, why don't you two come with us and wait for Brother Ye in our place?"

Then he thought for a while and continued, "Brother Ye has such a talented body and peaceful face. He must be blessed by heavens. He won't just die so young. Please don't worry."

"No." Xuan Bing coldly said, "We'll just wait here."

Then a powerful aura rose up from her that pushed all the strangers away. Apparently, she didn't want to talk anymore.

Ye Tianchen made a long sigh and said, "Since you insist, I think we should leave you undisturbed. Farewell."

Then he started to leave with his people.

"Shangxin, how many Regeneration Ink Lotus did we get from there?" Ye Tianchen asked in a low voice.

"Forefather, we have gotten forty-eight Regeneration Ink Lotus, all in top quality. Besides, we have many other materials. It is a

good harvest this time. The other materials were worth three hundred Regeneration Ink Lotus in total. When we left that place, we took ten Regeneration Ink Lotus from Li Clan, leaving only one to them." Ye Shangxin was excited. "We have fifty-eight top quality Regeneration Ink Lotus and about four hundred other medical materials."

...

Chapter 1042: Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit

"Good! Great job!" Ye Tianchen nodded with praise. "It seems we Ye Clan are going to take what we lost back. We may even achieve more. Regeneration Ink Lotus beyond middling is truly rare. Although it is still much less valuable than that young Brother Ye's lotus, it is valuable enough to please Misty Cloud Palace. Ye Clan is safe now..."

"However, Li Clan left earlier. I guess they are in our way..."

"I know. Why did I invite those two people to come with us back here anyway? What a shame. They didn't want to come. However, this is about the future of Ye Clan. We can't lose it."

"Okay."

"Let's all be careful. It is no further than four hundred miles away from our house. Move faster! Go home earlier!"

"Yes!"

Ye Clan people disappeared in the horizon like a wisp of smoke and dust.

Ye Chentian's voice was sounding in the wind with a sigh. "... What a shame... Brother Ye... would be better... I feel... he and our clan seem... connected... in some way..."

...

"What do we do?" Han Bingxue asked Xuan Bing.

"We wait!"

"For how long?"

"Until he comes out."

"What if it takes him days?"

"Then we wait for days."

"What if it takes him months?"

"Then we wait for months!"

"What if it is years?" Han Bingxue nervily kept asking.

- Puff, puff, puff, puff, puff... -

"Please... Mercy... Forgive me.... I'll wait... I will wait... no matter for how long... Holy heavens, it kills..."

...

After a long time, they heard the noise of fights and shouts from far away.

It must be the fight between Li Clan and Ye Clan.

Han Bingxue looked aside but didn't move. Xuan Bing didn't even bother moving her eyelids.

For them, it didn't matter which side won. They didn't care if any of them die. They couldn't be more insensible to that...

Even if the two clan's people all died, they wouldn't care. Would they go have a look? They had seen so many fights like that.

What happened between Li Clan and Ye Clan was just some small fight!

They weren't interested at all.

They only cared about Ye Xiao.

...

On the other side, it took Ye Xiao quite a while to calm down after being excited and hot-headed!

Not that he hadn't seen anything marvelous, after all, he was an influential figure who had the Boundless Space with nine Spaces in it, who was handsome and rich... However, what was happening was truly too... shocking!

What he had seen was much more pleasant than he could describe.

The first thing he looked at was definitely the Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit.

Before that, he always looked calm and steady, especially in front of Han Bingxue, as if even a landfall would never frighten him a bit. In fact, he was calm because he knew he wouldn't get it by being thrilled or excited. Deep in his heart, he was more thrilled and excited than Han Bingxue!

The Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit had an amazing quality that even Boundless Space didn't have!

Now, the fourth layer was all vividly shown in his sight. When he saw the cinnabar fruit, it looked much more splendid!

There were at least fifty cinnabar fruits on that tree, hanging there like transparent fruits. They were so attractive that he wished he could just rush over and grab a handful of them into his mouth.

"One, two, three, four... nineteen... thirty-five... seventy-seven..." He was dribbling. He took the fruits one by one and said, "This is great... There are actually this many..."

When he finished, he actually took the tree too and put it into Boundless Space. "Come with me. How incredibly long does it take you to fructify here..."

He was feeling honest and said, "Besides, this entire place is for me anyway..."

Apparently, he didn't feel guilty at all about taking the tree away after taking away all the fruits on it.

When he plucked up the tree, he realized the amazing surprise just began. The Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit might be valuable and precious, but compared to what he just found, it was just a child's toy...

Around the roots of the tree, there were lots of traces of spiritual qi.

"Is it... every time when the fruits fell, they fell around the tree... Holy heavens... How many have been wasted in here?"

He took in a cold breath.

Under the tree, there was a thick layer of spiritual paste which was half a foot thick!

It was transparent and beautiful.

The Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit took a thousand years to blossom, another one thousand years to fructify, and another one thousand years to become ripe. When it became ripe, the fruits would stay on the tree for a hundred days, and after that, they all fell. The Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit absorbed the energy from the spiritual qi around it. It was immune to the five elemental damage and to the natural disasters. It wouldn't die just because time passing. That meant as long as there was enough spiritual qi, it would continuously grow. It didn't need the nutrients from the ground like other plants.

Most importantly, the fruits wouldn't rot when they fell to the ground. As long as a fruit wasn't eaten, it would stay on the ground forever...

The Rainbow Cinnabar Fruits took three thousand years to fructify, so normally, the fallen fruits would be taken as soon as they touched the floor. Otherwise, it would be a waste, wouldn't it?

The tree of Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit had some other special efficacy. Everything around its roots wouldn't rot. If anything dropped around its roots, it would only be converted into pure spiritual qi.

That gave the tree of Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit a special name, Spirit Root!

When more and more spiritual qi gathered around the roots, especially when it was in somewhere airtight, the spiritual qi

would become spiritual paste!

Spiritual paste was the concentration of the purest spiritual qi. It was marvelous. Even the seven great sects that had been living for tens of thousand years in the realm couldn't have a little of spiritual paste!

It was such a rare and precious treasure!

Yet the spiritual paste under the tree was as thick as half a foot and as wide as three meters!

Ye Xiao figured there must be thousands of fruits that had gathered in this place to make such a big pile of spiritual paste.

He started to do the math. Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit took three thousand years to ripe. It could be no more than one hundred fruits at one time... That meant it should have taken tens of times... to make such a large-scale spiritual paste. The tree must have... been there for dozens of years!

"Incredible... unbelievable..." Ye Xiao grinned and put all the spiritual paste into his Space.

Even if the fruits fell to the floor, they would never rot. The fruit had a rather thin skin, but the skin was like gold. With that skin, not a single line of spiritual qi could leak out.

The Spirit Root converted the fruits into spiritual paste. Otherwise, Ye Xiao should have gotten lots of Rainbow Cinnabar Fruits!

...

Chapter 1043: All Good Stuffs

Actually, the heavens wouldn't create things that lasted forever. The special skill of Spirit Root was to primally work on its own fruits that wouldn't rot. If the fruits were eaten by other beings, they became energy of the beings. If not, they would fall to the ground and be converted into the spiritual qi of the world because of the Spirit Root!

It was such a weird and magical existence. There was an enormous spiritual qi around the tree. The air was almost immobile around the qi so that no spiritual qi would spread out. Otherwise, the spiritual paste would spread qi in the air for sure. However, the special inner environment kept it from happening! It was such a miracle!

The reason why Ye Xiao recognized spiritual paste was that he used to see a bit of it when he was in an auction somewhere as Xiao Monarch. That was right. People measured spiritual paste with bits. That bit of spiritual paste made the entire auction hot up. The final price of it was ten thousand times of all Xiao Monarch had. Although he wasn't a rich guy when he was Xiao Monarch, he was still a top level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator. However, he wasn't even able to buy one of ten thousand of that bit of spiritual paste. That was so shameful!

Now that he got so much of it, he figured no matter what happened, this would be worth it.

When he finished picking up the spiritual paste, he started to look around. When he looked around, he felt that he was like an ignorant countryman!

He was such a stupid man!

What he could see in this layer were all kinds of precious valuable medical materials!

He had just glanced around the area within one thousand meters when he found a few other materials that were even more valuable than Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit!

"I am going to be rich! So rich..." He was even shaking now.

"Erhuo, get in the Space and be ready to take whatever I put in. Prepare to make dan beads!" Ye Xiao shouted and walked ahead.

"Holy heavens... Blood Ginseng? There is actually such a material. Into the Space."

"Gold Ginseng? Good! Into the Space."

"This... Could it be Nine-spirits Flyer? Hmm. Nice... It looks exactly like it is recorded... Get it."

"Is this... Godly Heaven Root? It should be... Go, go, go..."

"What is this thing... all in white color? I don't care... Just get it..."

He had been acting like a country bumpkin who came to town for the very first time since he entered this layer. He just swept everything he saw.

In the beginning, he would try to recognize some materials to see if he knew it. In the end, he just took everything he could, like a peasant taking every valuable thing into his pocket!

Wherever he went, there left a big pit... No spiritual qi was left!

He didn't let go of anything at all!

He was like a soldier slaughtering a village!

Wherever he went, it became a waste area after...

The fourth layer was several times bigger than the third.

Ye Xiao had been collecting everything he could find since he entered this layer.

Normally, the higher it was, the fewer materials there would be. It took at least dozens of meters of distance between one valuable

plant and another. It made sure every plant had enough room to absorb enough spiritual qi.

Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit, especially in such a level, would need a space that was bigger than a mountain.

If a huge mountain had the Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit, there would be no other plants except grasses that could be living around.

The other plants, not to mention spiritual medicines, would never grow within the area.

That was the overbearingness of spiritual medical materials!

That was the rule about surviving the selection!

However, the rule never worked in this place. The spiritual qi in this layer was too dense and rich!

There was only spiritual qi in, not out.

It at least had been gathering spiritual qi since tens of million years earlier. It was also spiritual qi from all different lands and realms. All the spiritual qi gathered in this place and made this spiritual qi become dense like solid.

No matter how much spiritual qi the plants needed, it would be more than enough.

Thus, no plants needed to fight for limited nutrition!

There were no fights among the spiritual plants in this place!

That was why there were so many different medical materials growing in this place.

Ye Xiao kept collecting all kinds of materials. In the end, he felt that he was a bit dumb. He then started to clear hundreds of acres of farmland in the Boundless Space and put the spiritual plants into it...

It was faster and more efficient.

The excitement kept driving him to do this for three whole days

until he felt incredibly painful on the back. He nearly broke down because of exhaustion.

Then he realized he was such a typical idiot!

He had been collecting the plants in one direction all along. He was now only at the center of the fourth layer. He had only cleared the path which was dozens of meters wide and tens of thousand meters long... The rest of this place was still full of all kinds of spiritual plants!

He just looked around far and felt anxious and worried. That was such a huge amount. If he kept doing it like this, it would take him at least three years to clear everything!

Besides, he would have to work so hard and exhaust himself every day in the three years!

"So many... So fxcking many... How come..." He was upset but complaining impolitely.

If somebody heard his complaint, they would definitely beat him up so hard before doing anything else. [You got the chance to have all those medicines! Yet you actually complain about having too many? Kind deeds often go unappreciated, doesn't it?] Of course, these people would have to give him a good lesson!

While he was complaining, he found something else. Over ten meters ahead of him, in the core area of the fourth layer, there was a rock stele. There were words on it.

The words nearly made Ye Xiao spit out a mouthful of fresh blood and stir the qi inside his chest.

'I know what you are doing now. You are a blessed man. I guess you have a private spiritual space that you can store the plants or something. I guess you are transplanting the medicines. I can assure you that when you see this stele, you have roughly finished collecting one out of a thousand... of all medicines in this layer.'

Then there was a smiling face at the end.

That was such a bothersome and annoying smiling face.

...

Chapter 1044: So Despicable!

It seemed there were more words after that, but the grass covered them.

"Holy hell!"

Ye Xiao totally freaked out when he read it.

[Is this fooling me around? It is definitely making fun of me?]

[I have worked so damn hard. I have exhausted the hell out of myself. My legs are still aching. I have expanded a huge space in Boundless Space to make over a hundred acres of farmland, yet that only collected one of a thousand of all the medicines in this place?]

[If that is true, don't I have to spend years to clear the entire fourth layer?]

He was speechless.

At the same time, he felt weird. [The words on the stele, why does it feel so weird?]

He frowned and walked closer. He cleared the grass around the stele, looked closer, and found that there were still lots of words after that annoying gloating smiling face.

The first line was, 'I know you must be a stupid foolish sh*thead!'

"You are stupid! You are foolish! You are a sh*thead! Your entire clan is a bunch of stupid f*cking idiots! You must be a sh*thead since you actually created such a stupid f*cking place that is full of f*cking stupid medicines!" Ye Xiao never thought that such a great figure would write such words on the stele to insult him, so he shouted out at the first sight of the words. He was provoked!

However, only he himself could hear what he just shouted out!

'Don't shout. An idiot who has his own spiritual space, that space must be your most valuable property! Look at your dumb face! I

honestly can't be respectful to people like you. The man who is chosen by the heavens. Pah! Sh*thead idiot with some filthy money...'

Ye Xiao was gasping, staring with big eyes. If that man was right in front of him, he would punch the man in the face!

[Where did this prick come from?]

[Can't you talk decently?]

He actually wanted to break the stele into pieces!

The words went on, '... don't be unconvinced, kid. It is not a big deal. Let me tell you one thing. My boss used to have such a space for his own. We weren't so powerful back then. He was so pretentious just because he had that spiritual space... People admired him so much...'

'Don't tell me you are not the same! Damn it! I know people like you! Girls, beautiful girls, always are cheated by people like you... That is so f*cking unfair! I thought that it was so awesome to have a spiritual space like that. When I reached a certain height in cultivation, I realized such a stupid space doesn't mean a damn thing... It is something people can fart on... Look at you, cherishing it like it is what you have to keep your dignity...'

"Oh?" Ye Xiao finally couldn't help rubbing his head, even though he was still angry.

[Whoever wrote this is definitely not Master Tianji.]

When he first came to this place, the words showed up to him were so cultured and highbred. However, the words on the stele seemed more like a ruffian talking.

It was obviously a ruffian speaking.

'You actually became the fourth person yet I couldn't. Why? Is it because you always like to leave everything to only yourself?' That was questioning.

Then there was his own response, '... but I love to eat it all by myself too... Why wasn't I so lucky like you?'

Ye Xiao was annoyed. He couldn't help but swear, "F*ck you!"

What came after were all the abusive words from whoever was speaking through the stele.

'... You piece of sh*t. Your head is full of sh*t! The entire layer belongs to you now. Why don't you try to refine it? Picking up the plants one by one? Do you think you are a f*cking farmer or what? How can you become the fourth person? What a blind heaven! I didn't become the fourth person, and I married a woman who keeps punching me like it is a bloody game. I am more than just blind... I don't even seem like having eyeballs...'

"It must be your retribution! Heavens do have justice! You deserve whatever you hate! You villain! Bastard! You..."

Ye Xiao was so angry that his hairs stood straight. He pointed at the stele and started to shout and gasp.

He had never experienced such a thing. A man who he never met before actually pissed him off so badly. Whoever talked to him through the stele was definitely an annoying person.

In fact, from what the words expressed on the stele, that man was only complaining about Ye Xiao becoming the fourth person.

In other words, he was jealous.

'Wait and see! You son of a b*tch! When you see me, I will beat you up several times a day after that... The fourth person... Humph! I will beat you up so hard that you will feel like a dog...'

Ye Xiao's temples started twisting when he saw those words.

"I, Ye Xiao, swear to heavens after I know who you are, I will beat you up every time I see you! I will follow you and beat you no matter where you go!"

He swore fiercely.

'An idiot like you, who has a full head of sh*t, can never think of refining this stele... You f*cking prick. After all I have said to insult you, why don't you stop reading this. Don't read if you are brave enough not to...'

Ye Xiao was so angry that his eyes became blue.

"After being insulted like that, why would I stop now! I am brave or not, you will see when I put you down! Do you think I will just endure all the insults and get nothing in return?"

"I truly can't think of anybody who has such a filthy mouth like you!" Ye Xiao murmured with curses, "Great figures from old days... great ass! You are just a f*cking d*ckhead who needs to be fed with punches!"

'You stupid f*cking moron, read carefully now... If you want to refine... you must... and...'

That was a long speech. Ye Xiao got it.

However, what pissed him off was that almost half of the words were useless abusive words!

The last line was, 'If you can't succeed even after I have told you so much, just forget every abusive word that I put there. What is left about you will be all nice words... I won't bother to talk like that to a man who is no longer the fourth person and is full of sh*t in the head... I am a lonely man... Remember?'

- Puff! -

Ye Xiao was so angry that he sat down to the floor and spat out a mouthful of dark blood, shouting in full power, "You bastard! Wait and see! When I see you... I will... You bloody f*cking motherf*cker... whoop..."

He was gasping after spitting the blood out. His eyeballs popped up in anger!

However, about seventy percent of the grudge that he had in the

chest was let out along with the dark blood!

If that man showed up now, even if Ye Xiao knew he couldn't win, he would decisively rush ahead and fight that man with his life!

Even if he would be defeated, he would try to bite that man a few times hard!

He couldn't believe there was such an annoying person in the world!

That was absolutely too despicable!

So despicable!

...

Chapter 1045: Be Fooled

Ye Xiao was truly pissed. "God damn it! I am going to melt this stele even if it will cost my life! To catch this man and punch him hard in the ass is good enough to be a reason for me to risk my life on this! One reason is enough!"

Then he took a deep breath and calmed himself down.

He stared at the stele and read the instruction again.

'It is fairly simple. Whoever can read is capable of mastering it. However, for you, kid, I don't know. I don't think you are clever enough, because after all, you are a man who is so pretentious with your stupid spiritual space.' The words went on, 'First of all, hold the stele. Simple move... You can do it, can't you?'

There were no words after that.

Apparently, Ye Xiao had to do the first step before he got the hint of the second step!

He had gone this far now. He had to do it. He gritted his teeth and then held the cold stele with both hands.

Then a line of words appeared in the air before him. '... Second, put your jaw on top of the stele, tightly.'

Then it disappeared.

Ye Xiao stared and put his jaw on it carefully.

That was it. When a man made the first step, the rest would become much easier!

'Third, most important step, keep your dantian close to the stele. Keep it tight enough so that the spiritual qi in your dantian could contact the spiritual qi on the stele. Don't make mistakes on this step. Keep this in mind.'

Ye Xiao sighed. [What kind of stupid method is this? Well, to connect the spiritual qi of me with the spiritual qi on the stele

seems to be a reasonable move after all.]

So he did it as the words instructed.

What was displayed was Ye Xiao holding the stele with both hands, putting his jaw on it, standing out his dantian to touch the stele. That was such a weird posture.

'Fourth step, operate your spiritual power. Run it in full power for ninety-nine cycles.'

It wasn't so difficult to run his spiritual power, even though he was in such a weird posture...

When he finished running the power for ninety-nine cycles, some new words appeared, 'Keep your tongue out of your mouth with spiritual qi and move around the stele for one round and then withdraw the spiritual qi to your dantian. Then you will feel the true nature of the stele.'

[What... What kind of strange method is this? To keep my tongue out?]

[Is it for the purpose of secrecy or just fooling me?]

He had no choice but to follow the instruction. Then there were more words showing up. 'Sixth step, let out your spiritual qi from your dantian and cover the stele with the qi.'

'Seventh, raise up your left hand and put it on your right face. Raise your right hand and put it on your left hip. Keep your jaw and dantian close to the stele. This is important. Do remember it.'

Ye Xiao felt the anger rising up from deep inside his heart. [Bloody hell. Is there really such an embarrassing cultivation method? It can't be more awkward and stupid!]

He was thinking. [Am I being fooled?]

However... he had to do as it said, so as to find out what the man was exactly doing.

He did as it told him.

'Eighth, the most important step, make sure your spiritual power is perfectly running. Operate it and make three farts loudly. This is the only way to let you feel the internal concussion of the stele. Remember, I am not fooling you! This is the only way to melt and refine this stele. Once you miss this, you lose it forever!'

Ye Xiao was so embarrassed. However, he had gone this far and it seemed that man was also being serious. No matter how unwilling he was, he had to do it.

Deep in his heart, he had cursed that man for thousands of times.

Operating the martial art...

- Bang, bang, bang... -

After that, he exactly felt the concussion inside the stele. A few words appeared after that.

'Ninth step... Hahaha... Laugh my ass off... You actually did all. I guess I am always right about your stupidity. Hahaha... What a retard. I was fooling you... Hahahaha...'

- Puff! -

Ye Xiao spat out a mouthful of blood on the stele!

It was not dark blood this time. It was fresh!

[That is so despicable!]

"You f*cker!" Ye Xiao raged up like crazy. He had never been pranked like this ever even if this was his second life!

Whoever talked to him through the words on the stele actually treated him like he was the biggest idiot in the world...

He fooled Ye Xiao as he wished. What annoyed Ye Xiao the most was that he actually believed it and he did everything. He was actually pranked a hard one. [Holy heavens... Holy earth... I am so painfully fooled...]

[How do I keep my dignity anymore...]

He kept shouting and swearing like crazy. All kinds of abusive words came out of his mouth. His face turned totally red, and his eyes were opened so widely!

He couldn't help waving one hand and hit the stele, which had been fooling him for two hours!

"Bastard! Ahhhhh... I am going to kill you! I will kill you! Ahhhhh..." He was totally mad!

"You f*cking bastard! You f*cking despicable prick! Ahhhhh..." He jumped up nearly thirty meters high. Apparently, if he saw that man right now, he would kill him through all the abusive words from his mouth!

The grudge and hatred in his heart were so heavy!

"F*ck you! Nobody fools people like this!"

"You f*cking prick!"

"You most despicable motherf*cker!"

"This gets me so furious..." Ye Xiao spat out a mouthful of blood again... He couldn't even breath smoothly.

The next moment, what happened shocked him.

He recalled every detail since the beginning and felt quite weird about it. After that, he laughed out loud. "Holy hell! Hahaha... You f*cking bastard are truly talented. I have traveled worlds and looked upon all heroes. This is the first time that I am screwed so badly! Holy heavens... Hahaha..."

He started to laugh loudly like a madman.

He thought about how he followed every instruction... even though he knew it was weird and stupid, he still did it...

He felt it and he said, "It doesn't prove your cleverness. It only proves my obsession. I lost my true heart!"

"You are a despicable prick, but I shouldn't blame you. It was me

being obsessed so I got fooled! I deserved it!"

"My greediness got me trapped!"

"He who has no desire has no weakness. He who desires is easy to be controlled!"

...

Chapter 1046: True Start!

Ye Xiao laughed and laughed, but then sighed at the end.

"Fooled me, teased me, whatever you did to me, in this place, in this way, knowing what I would do, knowing what was in my mind... it proves you are stronger than me!

"I still want to punch you in the face. I would do anything it takes to punch you to death. I will take revenge for what you have done to me today. However, you are stronger than me. You are much more powerful than me!

"In my eyes, you are a superior cultivator who stands beyond the clouds! However, this won't last forever. From now on, you are my example!

"If I can't take revenge for this, I will never laugh in my life!

"I have to defeat you! I have to completely destroy you!"

He smiled and said, "Wait and see! Nobody can stop me from laughing!"

He meant every word he just said.

...

Somewhere far away.

A lazy guy who was laughing so wildly suddenly trembled. He looked around in confusion and said, "Who's there? Who's plotting?"

Another man who looked dishonest casually said while wagging his head, "Arrogant! Look at your dumbass face. Who would plot against you? Don't think much of yourself!"

"That's not right... Something is wrong..." The lazy man rubbed his head and said, "I felt the heavenly curse strike on me. It feels so real..."

"Come on!"

A few voices sounded together.

"What could be so wrong. Look at you. How could you possibly get stricken by something that advanced? You are having daydreams for sure. What a lunatic idea..."

The lazy man humphed and frowned. He thought for a while but didn't think of anything. It had been such a long time. How did he remember when and where there was a man cursing him...

Besides, he never feared the heavenly curse. It was just a bit difficult to take care of!

Then he stood up excitedly and said, "Who would like to play a game with me. The loser will take off all the clothes and block the spiritual power, walk around the Chief Xie's place like the emperor in his new clothes. Go and say hello to the host. Just say hello, no endearment..."

...

After a while, he himself was wearing nothing but a short underwear as he strode around a huge palace like he was vigorous and energetic. Whenever he wanted to be a dragon, he was like a worm... wanted to be a tiger, he was like a cat...

A white figure dashed out from inside the palace. He saw the naked man and became furious. The next moment, he started to beat that man fiercely, "Bastard! Bastard, bastard, bastard... I told you not to behave like a lunatic. Don't go! I won't kill you! I promise..."

"Mercy... Mercy..." The man's exclamation was resounding in the world. "Chief Xie, please... Mercy... Brothers, save me... Why are you standing there... Why are you just watching... Come to help me... Ahhhh... It hurts..."

"I said I wouldn't kill you, then I definitely won't kill you! Hahahaha..." The man in white didn't care about that man's

exclamation at all. He just kept punching and punching. None of that man's brothers showed up to help. Instead, they were all standing far away, watching and cheering, "Get him down, Chief Xie! Bravo!"

"Harder! Chief Xie!"

"Nice one!"

"That was awesome!"

"One, two three... Clap!"

- Pah, pah, pah... Pah, pah, pah... Pah, pah, pah, pah, pah, pah, pah...-

"Nice punch! Great! One more!"

"Yes! Yes! One more!"

"Oh yeah!"

"Keep going!"

After a long time, that lazy guy had been punched over ten thousand times and kicked over one hundred thousand times. At least, he was slapped as far as a few planets away...

"Go suck yourself there!" It ended with an angry shout.

After a while, the world returned to peace...

...

Ye Xiao shook his head and stayed silent. What happened had happened. He decided not to waste more time here. When he was about to turn around, he saw...

Under the stele he just destroyed, there was a much smaller jade stele!

On the jade stele, there was a line of words glowing saintly lights.

'You were screwed real hard, weren't you?'

Just a few words.

Ye Xiao twisted his mouth and answered, "Why don't you try it?"

That was weird.

When the glowing words showed up, Ye Xiao felt that it was Master Tianji coming back.

It was exactly how Master Tianji talked.

Although it was arrogant and high-sounding, it was also elegant and transmundane!

There was no actual evidence. It was just his instinct.

'Heh, heh. That was something you can't skip. I was thinking about doing this all by myself, but a lazy guy insisted that he should play a role in this. We are brothers, which means I couldn't just turn him down. That is why I let him leave something here... However, it doesn't matter. After all, this is a game. It won't do any harm to people. It brings delight.'

Ye Xiao made a big sigh.

[Game? Delight?]

[I think I am being so generous and nice. If somebody else plays this game of yours, he or she should have been driven crazy long ago! I think it is quite reasonable that even he or she would go to extremes and spit out a mouthful of blood and die.]

Then he thought deeper and got enlightened. [Why am I bothering about this? I am here to get huge benefits for myself. People are willing to do anything for only one percent, one of a thousand, one of ten thousand, or even just one piece of grass!]

[After all, if I wasn't greedy for more, how would I fall into his trap?]

'However, if you want to truly own this layer, you have to refine this stele! It is the first test that you have to pass! In fact, to break that stele is the only way to get to this jade stele.'

Master Tianji's words showed up on the jade stele. 'Now that you

have broken the stele... here comes the true challenge!'

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[To refine a stele again?]

[To be fooled again...]

He was obsessed with what he might get in this place, so he fell into the trap. It was forgivable after all. However, if he jumped into the same sh*t hole for the second time, that would be utterly disgraceful.

'Relax. I am not that vile.' One more line showed up on the jade stele.

It relieved Ye Xiao. He stopped hesitating.

It seemed the words of that man was totally convincing to him, that he would absolutely trust it with his heart.

...

Chapter 1047: Dominator of the Firmament

'Operate your full power and wrap the stele with it! If you can refine it, the entire Nine-layer Valley will be yours! You may not be able to enter the fifth layer yet, but the fourth layer has more than you can get. You will get to know that in the end, it is everything in this place that can support you to become a super powerful cultivator in the starry sky!'

'If you can't refine it within twenty-four hours, you will be banished out, and then you are no longer the fourth person anymore!'

'By the way, take this as an advice from a friend. With your cultivation capability, you can only hang around in no higher than the fourth layer. Before you reach the level of saint spirit unification and become the heaven's chosen, you should never step into the fifth layer!'

'Young man, I don't know your name yet, but... from now on, before you can go higher, this is the last time for you to see my words.'

'I will wait for you in the fifth layer!'

'If you can't enter the fifth layer in three years, you are no more the fourth person!'

'Take care of yourself!'

Master Tianji didn't tell much, but Ye Xiao realized none of his words was a joke

It seemed there was plenty of time for him, yet it was actually quite pressing!

If it wasn't urgent, Master Tianji, who was powerful to control the universe, wouldn't particularly warn him.

Ye Xiao felt the pressure now.

He closed his eyes and started operating East-rising Purple Qi in full power.

It was the first time since he was reborn that he was so concentrated on one single thing!

He had been in trouble for many times before. For example, when he was attacked by the Cosmic Hades' extreme cold qi, when he was fighting in the battle of the war, when he tried to get every force he could use to kill Gu Jinlong... He almost concentrated himself to do those things. However, it was almost. He always had something else in mind, unlike this time. This time, he was wholeheartedly working on that one thing. The only thing he had in mind was...

[Refine the stele! Refine the stele!] He kept talking to himself, extremely concentrated on it.

Before what just happened, if somebody told him that he would fully concentrate on doing something just in order to beat somebody up, he would definitely just laugh and call it hilarious.

It was absurd to work this hard just because he wanted to beat somebody up!

However, if somebody told him so now, he would see the person as his best friend who knew him the best!

It was obvious that he had one more thing that he had to cultivate harder for! That was to beat somebody up real hard!

In fact, at this very moment, that was the only thing he would work hard for! He had to make it come true!

The energy of the East-rising Purple Qi gradually flowed over and wrapped the entire jade stele. The stele suddenly shined in countless streams of lights.

One stream of the lights suddenly shot up to the sky and then disappeared into the universe.

Ye Xiao didn't notice it at all. He just focused on operating the martial art. Countless purple qi flows rushed over to the stele, like hundreds of rivers ran to the sea at the same time.

...

Somewhere far away.

A man in white clothes was sitting in meditation, with his eyes closed. His clothes were white like snow. He sat in a void and that made the void look deep and elegant.

A beam of purple light shot over, shocking the sky.

In the void where the man in white was, the light showed up and there appeared a vortex.

That beam of purple light exactly shot to the center of the vortex.

The vortex started to spin drastically.

The man in white clothes slowly opened his eyes. He looked at the vortex with his profound eyes and blandly said, "Here he comes, the fourth person!"

A shadow swayed. A man in black clothes showed up behind him.

The aura of this man was boundless, and it filled the entire firmament.

It was like his power never ended!

The man in white didn't look back. He knew who it was, so he asked gently, "Chief, you have improved again?"

The man in black blandly responded with a smile, "Finally made it to the fringe of the firmament. However, the energy flow was too exposed. I am in the initial phase after all. It will be perfect when I can make it feel like nothing and even you are unable to sense it."

The man in white sighed and said, "Congratulations, Chief. After reaching the top of your path, you finally took another step up. I

guess you are invincible in the starlit world?"

"Maybe, maybe not." The man in black smiled and said, "I am afraid not. I have a feeling that Jun Moxie must have reached this height long ago."

The man in white smiled, "Work harder then, Brother."

"It is such an unspoken status. Everybody has his or her own starlit world." The man in black smiled and said, "I believe you will all catch up soon, brothers."

The man in white nodded.

"Has the fourth person appeared?" The man in black turned around while looking at the vortex.

"He just did." The man in white stood up, showing a solemn face, "The Gate of Time was just activated."

"Hmm. Let's see how this one goes." The man in black nodded.

"There were eight times before this. Those eight all failed." The man in white spoke in a low voice, "The best of the eight only became a dominator of the starlit world. It was still a long way for him to go before the almighty greatness. Now it is the ninth."

The man in black suddenly smiled, "Tianji, don't you think it is quite familiar with the word 'ninth'?"

The man in white laughed and nodded. "That's right. That is why I have an optimistic view on him."

"Not just optimistic." The man in black blandly said, "He can do it!"

"Because this is the ninth!" He continued, "However, do not let anybody take any reckless moves! After the fourth person is confirmed, you should obscure the grand universe at once!"

"Yes." The man in white laughed, "They are all unsettled men who would love to see the world in chaos. They said they wouldn't stick their hands into this, but they probably will still do it. At least

Ji Mo has had a conflict with the young man already."

"Nonsense!"

The man in black frowned. The vortex was slowing down and starting to turn into a flat screen. He saw it and said, "Tell the brothers to come now."

The man in white said, "Aye!"

"Tianji, after this, we are in halfway of predestination. What we have been worrying about will be all solved. However... about Ji Mo...just get it done. If they keep putting it off... I am afraid it will only lead to a greater regret," the man in black slowly said.

...

Chapter 1048: Gamble of the Strong

"Okay. We will figure out a way." The man in white clothes smiled and said, "I did think about doing it for him. I just felt that it wasn't the right time for the girl to get married. However, the fourth person has shown up, and before the fifth, the star of love is rising. I guess it is about time to let her get married... Let's make an arrangement this time."

"Yes. To finish a job that has to be done," the man in black nodded and said.

After they finished talking, several figures showed up from all directions. - Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

They already shouted before they landed on the floor. "Chief!"

The vortex suddenly froze. An image showed up on the screen in the middle of the vortex.

It was Ye Xiao cultivating.

The men all turned solemn. "Is it the fourth?"

...

In the Mountain of All Medicines.

The fourth layer.

Ye Xiao was covered by flowing purple qi, sitting quietly.

Nobody knew, but he had been transferring the energy for a long time. Even though his East-rising Purple Qi had long-lasting power, he already felt a bit exhausted... He slightly opened his eyes and he was shocked. The surface of the stele started to melt.

The stele was one round smaller than it should be.

He took a breath of relief and spirited up. He was now sure that he could eventually refine the stele.

He closed his eyes again and focused on transferring energy. It

lasted for another period of time until something resounded from inside the stele.

It seemed disorderly.

However, rather than some random noise, it was more like several people talking.

How could people talk inside a stele? Ye Xiao was distracted, so he failed to keep focusing on it with his East-rising Purple Qi. The weird sound inside the stele weakened.

He was an experienced cultivator. Although he didn't really understand what it was, he could have a good guess about how it worked. He hurriedly ran his spiritual power in full effort and gathered the energy of East-rising Purple Qi to focus on pouring the energy into the stele.

The purple qi from the Boundless Space rushed into his Jing and Mai like tides.

Insensibly, his Jing and Mai had expanded largely. The veins became so flexible and bouncy!

When he was crazily operating the martial art, East-rising Purple Qi was enhancing his Jing and Mai!

He didn't notice it at all. He was lost in the weird sound inside the stele...

As expected, this time, he clearly heard the voice.

It was somebody talking.

"Come! What about a bet? I say this guy can never successfully refine the stele! Let's make an exciting one this time. Whoever loses the bet has to roll on the floor naked and then have a farmland shag! Who has balls? Hahaha! Ahwooh... Dog Aunt!"

When Ye Xiao heard the voice, he knew who he was. He gritted his teeth so hard because of hatred. That man was definitely the man who left the words to humiliate him.

"You idiot! Rolling on the floor naked? How is that exciting? Farmland shag? Come on. We don't have farmland. We only have floor shag!"

"Wait, not just that. How to shag without a girl? What are you shagging exactly? If you ask for my advice, I would say to ride a horse and have a horse shag! That is bloody exciting!"

"Holy hell. You d*ckhead bird without wings! That is vicious! What do you say we let whoever loses ride on your back and have a bird shag!"

"Stop! Can't you stop making such complicated gambles? Let's make it simple. Whoever loses will have to go to a planet and yell in the sky with the voice that reaches every resident of that planet, saying 'I, Ji Mo, is a d*ckhead!' We are brothers. Don't embarrass each other so badly. Just be nice, will you?" A gentle voice sounded.

"That's a good idea, Wizard."

"That's right. Wizard has a good point."

"Hahaha..."

Several men talked at the same time.

The man who first talked was silent for a while, until he suddenly shouted, "You bloody villainous Wizard! Do you want to die? Whoever loses will shout his own name! Why does everybody have to shout my name? Do you know what a gamble is?"

Several men beside him started to laugh loudly.

A heavy sound appeared, "I bet he can do it. I will bet my blade on it!"

A sharp voice coldly sounded after, "I bet he can do it. With my sword!"

A few others seemed dissatisfied. "Those are not what we agree with. What is wrong with you, betting a blade and a sword on this?"

Trying to be smart? Nobody is going to take those things, alright?"

Another man came up with an idea, "Let's change the rule. Whoever loses fights against Chief for one whole day. He will not be allowed to retreat or to end the fight earlier. How is that?"

Everybody was silent when they heard it.

After a while, that man who was called Bird Man gulped and said, "That... That is a bit... too hard... It is okay not to retreat, but not to end the fight... That..."

A few others shouted at the same time, "I know you are a coward even though you are known as a man who would always risk your life long ago. That's why you are Bird Man! You deserve it!"

Bird Man was pissed, "You talk like you f*cking dare! I always risk my life because I have confidence! It doesn't mean I will go court death myself! To look for death time and time again, that will leave a trauma in the heart!"

A bland voice sounded, "Let's stop arguing. We just each propose our own stake. We don't have to make the same bet. Whoever loses just follow what he agrees."

A gentle voice sounded, "I am in. I will be the judge. I guess nobody has a different opinion, have you?"

Hearing the gentle voice again, Ye Xiao confirmed that this Wizard must be Master Tianji, who left the stele for him.

The guy Wizard had only spoken twice so far. His voice was clear and elegant like it contained all the secrets of the universe, that everything was under his control, and that even if the entire universe exploded in front of him, he would still be calm and steady.

"It's a good idea." A clear and loud voice sounded, "Okay. I would like to bet one golden scale against Hua Hua. If Hua Hua, well, Rabbit loses, I get one flower from him. We will use it on the fifth person and the sixth person after all."

Another voice blandly sounded, "Okay. Not a problem. Deal. However, I would like to add a Dragon Slayer Sword to the stake!"

The clear and loud voice seemed angry. "Dragon Slayer Sword? What do you mean?"

"What? Don't you know what I mean? If you only called me Hua Hua, I won't be pissed. But you actually called me Rabbit! I am certainly going to get the sword from you! So what?" The bland voice seemed annoyed. "I haven't let the flower blossom on your skin. That shows my generousness and respect too much! Don't you think so!"

...

Chapter 1049: To Let You Get Punched!

A few others talked around them. "That's good. Nice bet! It gets things done and makes one of them happy."

The sharp voice sounded again, "Okay. I am betting with Dong Wushang. My sword for his blade. The souls of my sword and his blade will be merged as one. It will be hidden in the firmament. When the right person finds it, it is the winner's credit."

The heavy voice responded, "Deal!"

As the heavy voice sounded, Ye Xiao felt shocked, as if the man who had that voice was invincible and overwhelming.

The suppression from the power of the blade suddenly struck on him.

He was frightened.

Before this, Fierce Blade Li Wuliang was the most capable blade user in Ye Xiao's heart. However, Li Wuliang was at most second from now on. Maybe Li Wuliang was far from the first from now on. The man who had that heavy voice had a marvelous capability not only in sword art but also in cultivation—it was way beyond what Ye Xiao could imagine. To compare him to Li Wuliang was definitely humiliating the former.

Not to mention Ye Xiao, if Li Wuliang knew Ye Xiao compared him to such a powerful figure, he would fight Ye Xiao for it. It was a humiliation to the art of swordplay to compare him to such a great figure! He would have to kill whoever made such an absurd comparison!

The Bird Man who sounded a bit wretched talked again, "I bet with a one day fight against Chief. I bet he can pass it. Ji Mo, will you accept it?"

"F*ck y..." The voice who Ye Xiao hated to hear was sounding. It seemed the man was shocked. "You asshole! I will rip your hair off

tomorrow!"

"Just tell me if you dare!" Bird Man was provoking him. Apparently, he was quite confident. He just wanted Ji Mo to accept it.

"Only cowards will say no!" The man responded, "Since you want to be beaten so bad, go to the Chief and prepare for the punch!"

"I also bet with Ji Mo the young man can pass. If I win, Ji Mo go fight against Chief Xie one whole day! No retreat! Can't end the fight earlier! It has to be one full day!"

"What's the matter with you two? Why are you all f*cking with me?" The man sounded upset, "Don't we just want to have some fun from this? Why are you doing this to me? Do you really have to?"

The others laughed together. Somebody said, "Cut the bullsh*t. Just tell us if you dare! Don't you always say that you are the bravest among us?"

"Deal!" Ji Mo gritted his teeth and said, "I am sure this young man will fail! Why wouldn't I dare to bet? Since when did I see things wrong?"

At this moment, Master Tianji's voice sounded again, "All deals are set. Nobody changes. Let the Heaven's Will be the witness. Ring the bell and it's done! Whoever violates it will be considered losing all bets!"

The others exclaimed. They were shocked. "Holy hell! Wizard, aren't you vicious! We are just playing! You actually used Heaven's Will on this?"

Master Tianji seemed smiling. "What a fun game. We must make it a big one. Otherwise, somebody will certainly repudiate the bet. That would be boring."

"That's true." The others laughed. "We never repudiated anything after all. Hmm. Ji Mo must be quite annoyed now..."

"Hahahaha..." People laughed loudly.

Meanwhile, one man was also laughing so loudly with them. He was so happy that his face looked like a blossoming flower!

It was certainly Ye Xiao who was laughing so happily!

Apparently, that elegant and mystic Master Tianji must also be a wicked person since he suddenly made that game so serious. Although Ye Xiao didn't know what the Heaven's Will Witness meant, he knew it must be something advanced. It must be something that made sure Ji Mo couldn't refuse to do what he should after losing the bet!

As long as he lost, he would have to do as he promised. That Chief was unknown to Ye Xiao, but he must be quite powerful. It must be a torture to fight against him!

It was such a delightful thing for Ye Xiao to know that Ji Mo would suffer!

What was more important was that the bet was all about him. As long as he passed the trial, Ji Mo would lose it!

Although he was yet to know what the trial was, he knew he had to win! He had to pass it!

He was thrilled and fully motivated now. The East-rising Purple Qi was running beyond the limited rate. Maybe he concentrated more than ever at the moment, but the voice from inside the stele became clearer!

The sharp voice sounded, "Kiddo, come up earlier and beat the guy up hard!"

The heavy voice sounded too, "I would love to lose the bet if it gives you the chance to come up earlier and beat him up to death."

The man who bet with gold scale spoke, "He may not be able to succeed though... Back in the old days, Chief was such an incredibly talented person... That thing we set up is simple, but it

is impossible for ordinary people to pass."

"You stupid!" Another man said, "Then you bet he can't do it?"

"I do," the prior answered.

The latter said, "Fine!"

"Wait! This isn't right. You guys are doing this against me! How can you do this? No!" The man named Ji Mo sounded full of grudge, "This is unfair! You should give me all your stakes if I win!"

"Good dream! Guys, let's beat him up in advance now! Have fun!"

- Bang, bang, bang... -

"Mercy... Please..."

Another wave of laughter echoed out. The sound inside the stele stopped after that.

Ye Xiao was shocked.

A long time after the voice inside the stele disappeared, he finally returned to himself. Apparently, it was so unbelievably mysterious to him.

Some men who must be bored of their lives... eight or nine men... making bets together, gambling, having fun from it... They were making bets about whether he could achieve certain success.

[Since when did I become so awesome... I didn't know that...] Ye Xiao touched his own face. He was stunned. [Those guys... any one of them is powerful enough to dominate a huge piece of land in the world, yet they stay together to bet because of me? Even if they are truly bored... that is still too flattering... I am so stressful!]

The men who bet he couldn't pass were just having fun and making jokes, except that man Ji Mo... He truly didn't believe Ye Xiao could do it. That bothered Ye Xiao.

"Even if only to let you lose the bet! To let you be beaten up hard!"

"I have to refine the stele."

...

.

Chapter 1050: Disorientation Array

Ye Xiao closed his eyes.

The stele was gradually melting not as fast as it started though. It was getting slower and slower.

Ye Xiao understood that it wasn't a sign of completion. It was instead the beginning of the true trial. At the moment, his head was full of delusions that moved his heart.

The delusion in his head was more than just illusion. It was more like the reflection of the reality that had entered his mind. At first, he saw an elegant scholar, who was wearing a white robe and holding a purple jade flute, casually walk before his eyes. It would be too simple if that was all. Behind the scholar, it was the splendid starry sky—the limitless universe—as if the scholar's casual walk undesignedly brought the starry sky.

He moved, the starry sky followed; he walked, the universe served!

Ye Xiao's mind was almost lost in that endless starry sky immediately. That man in white robe had created something Ye Xiao absolutely couldn't resist! At an important point, East-rising Purple Qi burst. The rising purple qi stirred around and the man in the white robe was gone.

However, his profound eyes seemed still staring at Ye Xiao after that.

The next moment, Ye Xiao realized he had just woken up from the delusion and then he had another reaction. It was his cultivator's spiritual sensation for danger. It was a strong feeling of danger. He was not just shaking. His entire body was aching.

After that, from far away in the sky, a dot of light showed up. The next moment, it had become a shooting huge stream of sword light, with the light filling the universe.

It was a sword.

A man in black was holding a long sword. His body seemed straighter and tougher than even the sword. He was flying over with his sword, destroying all the stars along his way. No matter how the dust and cloud covered everything, the sword light was still dazzling and illuminating the world.

That man in black looked handsome but cold and indifferent. His eyes were sharp, emotionless as if everything was dead before his sword—he wouldn't show mercy to anyone.

Ning Biluo's avenging sword attack was just one out of a billion as powerful as this man. Han Bingxue, who was known for his coldness, was less than one out of a billion to this man. There was a natural difference between them. Han Bingxue was more or less pretentious. That was why he liked to play cold. Instead, the man in black was really cold. He didn't need ice to make people feel his coldness!

His appearance and his sword, both were beyond the coldness of ice!

"The power of this sword attack..." Ye Xiao took in a cold breath. "It is actually capable of destroying the universe and the stars... Just how powerful is this man and his sword art that it's possible to do such damage?"

Although he had never been to Human Realm Upon Heavens, he was sure even the most powerful man in Human Realm Upon Heavens could never possibly make a sword strike like this man did!

It was definitely the supreme play of sword!

The splendid sword light flashed by.

Such a powerful sword, such a frightening power, Ye Xiao had no words to describe how shocked he was. He was totally soaked in this astonishment, just like he was lost in that starry sky which

was created by the man in white robe!

Suddenly, something happened...

A grand light of a saber appeared from far away. When it just showed up, it lit up the entire space. All the stars exploded into specks of dust when it appeared.

The saber did no different to the sword if considered only the result. They both destroyed all the stars in an irresistible way. However, that sword strike destroyed the stars one by one while flying. That saber struck the entire space and destroyed all the stars at the same time!

That saber attack actually turned the entire space into a tens of million miles wide and long horrible dark hole!

Eventually, even the entire space was gone under the attack of the saber.

After the saber light, a shadow of a big tough guy flew over. As this guy just showed up, his vigor and the overwhelming aura of fierceness filled the firmament.

It seemed this man was standing on the ground reaching the sky, filling the entire space.

Such incredible saber art was also unknown to Ye Xiao. He hadn't even heard of such a powerful saber art in any myth. He was quite knowledgeable about all kinds of weapons and martial arts. however, he always favored the sword. That was why even though the saber was more powerful and more shocking than the swordplay, the sword astonished him more. In fact, it calmed him down a little bit after being stunned by the sword!

Suddenly, Ye Xiao had a thought in mind. If Li Wuliang saw what had just happened, or any other saber user, they would die in satisfaction!

As the saber flashed by...

A huge and long golden dragon appeared. It was a tens of thousands meters long dragon hawking over within seconds.

After the golden dragon, a phoenix showed up.

The wings of the phoenix was so huge that Ye Xiao couldn't see the edge in this boundless universe.

After the phoenix, the entire universe was filled with flowers. It was a strange flower that Ye Xiao had never seen before. It was so beautiful, and it was in the color of dreams.

Blooms filled his sight.

One after another, all blossomed. The flowers kept blossoming again and again. It was a scene that enchanted anybody!

However, Ye Xiao felt terrified from deep inside his heart. He felt cold in the bottom of his heart.

...

One after another marvelous figure showed up in different splendid scenes...

He was shocked and shocked again and again.

Unconsciously, his dantian had been shocked again and again.

His dantian was cracking. Unconsciously, he was lost in the disorientation array. He couldn't get out of it.

If his dantian broke, it meant he thoroughly failed. In fact, he might even be destroyed and couldn't accomplish anything anymore in his life.

If the East-rising Purple Qi didn't burst and save him at the beginning, he would have been lost in the starry sky, the sword, and the saber scenes soon. The appearance of the saber play eased him a bit from the astonishment of the sword. The first three scenarios gave him a certain extent of resistance. Otherwise, any one of the golden dragon, the phoenix, and the flower... could instantly disorient him!

Chapter 1051: Chief Is In!

Ye Xiao was too weak, yet because of the good luck, he held on till the present!

However, he didn't know how lucky he was. He didn't know any change in his body. He didn't even feel anything.

Far away from him.

In a luxury hall in a universe of the void, several men were sitting together. One man among them was wearing black clothes who had a handsome face. On both his sides, there were two men wearing white and black. Six more men were behind him. Every one of them looked handsome and outstanding. They were all staring at the image in the screen in front of them.

In the screen, it was the image of what happened to Ye Xiao.

Unlike Ye Xiao who had no idea what kind of a fatal danger he had fallen in, the nine people here knew everything about Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was covered in blood. All the veins in his body exploded, as well as his Jing and Mai.

If his inner breath stopped and the pulsation in his Jing and Mai slowed down, he might not only die immediately but also be reversely impacted by his own spiritual qi and be atomized.

However, there was only the expression of being shocked on his face, nothing more. He had no sense to any of the pain on himself.

Apparently, he was lost in the delusion.

He could resist it a little bit because of the influence of those enormous scenes. However, the scenes that were displayed to him were too astonishing. That weak resistance of him couldn't help him much. He was not totally lost, but it was already difficult for him to get out.

The man who stood beside the man in black clothes and also

wore black clothes had a pair of cold and sharp eyes. He was the man who struck that marvelous sword attack earlier. He blandly took a breath and didn't say anything.

The other man standing on the other side of the man in black had been smiling all the time as if nothing could truly bother him.

"It seems there is nothing to be done. Nothing can save him now." Among the crowd, a young man in white clothes sighed. He looked extremely handsome, actually even prettier than a girl.

Another man frowned and said, "How come? He is the chosen one after all. How can he fail in only recognizing the delusion? The only practical resistance was made by his special martial art. Now, he is totally soaked in... Isn't it... Isn't it too weak?"

A young man in blue clothes laughed and said, "Indeed! If I were him, I would have passed this long ago."

"Get away!"

A few other men shouted in anger at the same time. "Look how old you are? When you are at his age, would you still talk boldly like this?"

Another young man smiled wickedly and said, "How many other young men could actually pass this one, except me, Ji Mo? Brothers, just admit your failure. Come on. Should you fulfill your promises?"

A slim young man suddenly showed a gloomy face and started to sigh.

"It is still too early to judge. It isn't the end yet. Let's keep watching." The man in white clothes warmly smiled. "You guys are just too impatient."

The man in black who stood in the middle smiled. "Wizard is right. There is nothing to be judged until it ends. Be patient."

He paused for a while and said, "However... even now, I still

believe that man can pass this challenge."

"Chief, I am submissive to almost everything you say. I would trust you even if you tell me sh*t smells good and rice smells bad. But... I don't think I will follow your opinion this time. He is now delirious. It is impossible that he can get sober again. What hope does he have? Unless people like us interrupt it, but we are all sitting here watching it, who on earth could interrupt that?" Ji Mo shouted.

The man in black who stood in the middle smiled. "Ji Mo, if you are so sure about it, why don't you bet with me?"

The others shouted at once, "Chief is joining this? Bravo!"

Ji Mo rubbed his head and looked confused. He looked at the image on the screen, in which Ye Xiao was bleeding in the eyes, nose, mouth, and ears. Ye Xiao looked terrible in the face. He was apparently going to a dead end. There seemed to be nothing that could save him.

Ji Mo hurriedly said with his eyes lit up, "Chief, are you serious? Even now, you still dare to bet he can pass?"

"Why not?" Chief smiled blandly. "The question is if you dare to accept it?"

The man who was called Wizard smiled and warned, "Ji Mo, this is a friendly warning. Our Chief has never lost one bet in his life... You have to think about it really carefully."

Ji Mo hesitated when he heard Wizard. After a while, he gritted his teeth and said, "Since Chief is so interested in this, I will not disappoint him. However, I have to say one thing first. That man is in a situation that we all can see. He is quite in danger. He would never get away from the Disorientation Array unless somebody who is as powerful as us helps him. We must keep things fair if we bet. If somebody secretly helps him, it breaks the rule. If somebody interrupts it, it breaks the rule. When somebody breaks the rule, it

doubles the wager. How about that?"

The others were all shocked when they heard it. Maybe they should see this man differently when they only haven't seen him for three days? Ji Mo was ruining the last hope of Ye Xiao. Maybe even a fool could get one brilliant idea after coming up with a thousand?

The Chief laughed and said, "No problem. It should be as you said. I will supervise this. Not only the nine of us are not allowed to help him, but also anybody else! If anybody else helps him, I will take the responsibility!"

Ji Mo was so excited to hear that. He laughed loudly, "Chief, your word means unbreakable in the witness of the sky and earth. I am going to break your story of invincibility! A deal is a deal!"

The man in black twisted his lips and squinted at Ji Mo. "Wait. You haven't told me what is your wager?"

"I will accept anything you want me to bet with! Let's just hurry!" Ji Mo was a little impatient as he thought this was such a great opportunity. "Chief, come on. Quick! Make a deal! It is going to be late..."

He was so certain that Ye Xiao could break down at any second. That was why he was so impatient. He was afraid Ye Xiao would explode before his Chief made the deal...

That would mean the bet was off.

Ye Xiao's life was negligible to Ji Mo, but to defeat his Chief was a great treat!

...

Chapter 1052: Life Path!

"Fine. If you win, I will help you complete your mission, and you can just go and have fun. If you lose, when I go to make the decision about the candidates, you have to..." The man in black humphed and talked a lot.

After what he said, the others burst into laughter. "Hahahaha... Chief, you are narrow-hearted... Ji Mo, what about you? Do you accept the bet? Quick! Say it! Come on..."

Ji Mo seemed troubled. He spoke in a bitter face and said, "Chief, this is... this seems to be inappropriate..."

"Are you telling me you don't have the guts to bet? Who said he would accept any bets? You are the boldest among us all!" The others heckled.

"It is easier said than done! Who of you dares to take this bet? Who dares to say it out loud? Holy hell... You actually want me to be disguised as a woman and to warm that man's bed... Chief, this is too much. You can't do this. You will get a real stinky reputation even if you win..."

Ji Mo started to swear. "Why don't you go warm that bed?"

The others immediately shut up.

The man in black, their Chief, was amused, "It seems you don't dare? Forget it then. Just remember it is you who don't dare to bet, not me!"

The man in white clothes said, "Maybe we can change the bet... Ji Mo, your daughter is interested in nobody. She doesn't even want the Chief's son. I guess she just doesn't mean to be in love with any one of our children. What do you say we let her go down there and go through that trial? What about the next round?"

"Screw you! Are you actually having designs on my daughter?" Ji Mo raged up and said, "Absolutely no! Abso-f*cking-lutely no!"

"Don't make excuse for that. What matters is your daughter's own opinion, isn't it? If your daughter doesn't want to take it, who dares to force her? Who can force her?" The others were disdainful. "What you are doing is to keep your daughter from getting married!"

"That's true. If I have a daughter who is the most beautiful girl in a starlit world, I will hate to let her marry too. Besides, Ji Mo and his wife are two such ugly people. They definitely see their beautiful daughter as their biggest treasure, don't they? She must be the only hope the couple has to live on!" The others kicked up a fuss.

Ji Mo was furious. He said, "Damn you! It's fine that you keep talking about me. Why do you have to bring my wife and daughter in? You can't joke on that, can you?"

The others were surprised. In fact, they knew Ji Mo was right. They were brothers. It was always fine to make fun of each other, but it was inappropriate to make fun of their families!

Ji Mo saw the others being shocked, so he was high-spirited and shouted loudly, "Is it true that my daughter makes the decision?"

Tianji smiled and said, "Of course!"

"Okay then. Next round, it has to be when the world is in chaos and the nature of heavens is disordered! Otherwise, I can't believe that you assholes won't stick your hands in it!" Ji Mo spoke fiercely, "Other than that, my daughter will have some protective treasures with her! You all have to give her some!"

"That's not a problem! Your daughter is also our sworn daughter! She gets whatever she needs from us! We have everything!"

"I guess this is a deal?" Their Chief, the man in black, exchanged looks with the man in white clothes, Tianji.

"Yes!" Ji Mo shouted, "I don't think I will lose!"

"We have come to an agreement under the Heaven's Will

Witness!" A lightning strike traversed the sky.

The bet was made under the Heaven's Will Witness. No matter who the two sides are, none of them could change it.

After that, they all turned to the screen and focused on the image shown on it.

In the image, Ye Xiao was still covered in blood in a miserable way. Only his face looked in peace. Apparently, he was still lost in the delusion.

Ji Mo seemed quite delighted. "As heaven's movement is ever vigorous, so must a gentleman ceaselessly strive along. I said I wouldn't..."

However, before he finished the emotional conclusion, he exclaimed loudly and then jumped up quite high. His eyeballs nearly popped out of the eye frames. He shouted, "Holy hell! Why?"

The others burst into laughter watching him.

In the screen, Ye Xiao was still covered in blood, bleeding in his nose, eyes, mouth, and ears. However, he was more emotionally stable. His mind was still lost in the delusion. He didn't make it out yet, however, a mistrial qi was about to flow around his body.

Ji Mo's eyes were wide opened, and his eyeballs nearly fell out. He was in disbelief as he murmured, "Why... why is it like this? How come? It is impossible for him to get out of that delusion without help... How come? ..."

Such a great figure was actually so lost at this moment.

The others looked at him but unusually didn't tease him and just kept smiling.

In the screen, Ye Xiao blinked and murmured, "Such power can directly affect the sky and earth. It truly is fascinating. Every one of them has reached such an incredible level. It means all routes

can lead to the same destination... If one day I can also have such a capability..."

When he said that, he looked yearning and also respectful to that power.

For him, it was like a daydream at the moment.

Even thinking about it, he felt like an arrogant and ignorant dude humiliating those super powerful figures.

As he had such a feeling, he was shrinking back a bit.

He thought, [Maybe I can't become as powerful as they are, but it would be good enough to become a superior cultivator in Human Realm Upon Heavens. After all, a powerful figure in Human Realm Upon Heavens is already a person all men in Qing-Yun Realm have to look up to...]

When he thought so, suddenly, his vein and Jing and Mai broke again and entered an even worse situation. If East-rising Purple Qi didn't automatically begin to protect him, he might have died in a mass of blood mist because of the reverse impact of his inner power.

Ji Mo was excited when he saw that. He kept his eyes widely opened and said, "Breaking! He's breaking down! Come on... I am winning... Who says kindness never gets blessed. The heaven blesses the right man today. Hahaha..."

However, when he was feeling confident and enjoying the current situation...

In the image, Ye Xiao's eyes shot out a strong light. That light was full of decisiveness and craziness. He started to speak word by word, "It shouldn't be an assumption... I can definitely do it! In order to beat that bastard Ji Mo up, I have to be able to do it! I should be even better than that!"

"I am going to punch him to death!"

"I have to beat him to death!"

"I have to surpass him, so as to avenge what he has done to me!"

"I can!"

"I can do it!"

"This is the path of my current life!"

He shouted loudly and it shocked the environment! What a great aura of strength!

At this moment, he was more determined than anytime he had been before.

At this moment, the rolling purple qi in the world kept spontaneously rushing into his body!

...

Chapter 1053: Miserable Man!

In the capricious rolling purple qi, the bloodstains were all gone on Ye Xiao's face, which looked pretty ferocious because of the bleeding eyes, nose, mouth, and ears. The injuries not only in his face but also in the rest of his body were all gone instantly!

All the fatal wounds that he should be suffering from head to toe were all gone!

As if nothing ever happened...

However, he was still in the delusion.

Yet everything was different. Because of what was happening at the moment, it could be said that he had passed the delusion challenge.

A good fortune may forbode bad luck, which may, in turn, disguise as a good fortune. The endless purple qi rushing into his body was too much for him to take as he was still too weak. He should have died in an explosion.

His physical condition was in an extremely negative situation. That meant he was definitely going to die in such a condition. However, his East-rising Purple Qi was the most fundamental energy form of the purple qi in the world. Ye Xiao couldn't handle the massive purple qi, but the purple qi automatically rushed into him to recover his broken body. It all happened during the moment when Ye Xiao was still lost in the delusion. Even though his body was almost festered, the purple qi forcibly saved it. The enormous amount of energy should be a fatal strike on Ye Xiao, yet it turned out to be a miracle that saved his life. Things were sometimes strange and unpredictable!

Ye Xiao himself didn't know the change, but the powerful men who were watching from the other side immediately understood what happened. They marveled in their minds. [He is after all the

chosen man. In such an unchangeable despairing situation, he could actually return from the path to death and escape from the crisis! How lucky!]

Ye Xiao had passed the most dangerous part. What came next were all royal roads. The jade stele was melting faster and faster. In the end, it became a stream of light shooting into his forehead between the eyebrows.

All was done!

"It's done!"

"Ji Mo lost it!"

"He has just lost it all!"

"Hahahaha... Laugh my ass off..."

The men couldn't hold it anymore. They burst into crazy waves of laughter. Only Ji Mo was still obsessively staring at the void where there was no image anymore, with his mouth wide open, even still showing the laughing face of him.

Yet he looked just like an ordinary man who had just bumped into ghosts... Unbelievable.

"Holy hell! What the f*ck just happened?" Ji Mo crazily grabbed his hair and suddenly jumped up high. "Damn, damn, damn, damn, damn, damn, damn, I'll be damned..."

The others saw him like that and laughed even harder, and they started to feel pain in the belly.

"That is truly unexpected. The guy actually broke through a new level in the delusion. The breakthrough even drove the purple qi gathering to him from the world, turning the danger into safety... Well, it seems Ji Mo has been playing an important part in this thing. He actually helped that young man. Otherwise, Chief should have lost it for real..."

"Chief continues his legend of invincibility!"

"That was close though."

"We must admit that Ji Mo is such a good guy... He would even let himself lose to help Chief with the legend of invincibility. What a self-giving virtue! How can anybody not be touched... I don't care if you are moved, I definitely am... Hahahaha..."

"I am touched too. I am puffing... Ji Mo lifted a stone to hit his own toes. He was winning it, yet he had to witness the young man return from death. How delectable."

"I can't stop laughing... My belly is exploding because I am laughing so hard... I haven't been so happy for thousands of years... I decided to live on this hilarious memory from now on..."

"Me too..."

The men were laughing so hard, but Ji Mo felt like he had just lost his parents to death.

"The bet is done." Tianji started to announce the result, "At the end of the gamble, Ji Mo is the biggest loser. Hmm. Let me check. In total, he has lost... a daughter, seven times of hard whole-day fights against Chief Xie... and three times of fights against our Chief... and more... Let's congratulate Ji Mo for he has gotten so much from the loss!"

- Pah, pah, pah, pah... - The crowd burst into clapping. Everybody was happy.

While they were clapping, they staggered with laughter. They would keep laughing even if it would explode their bellies.

"It doesn't matter that he lost it. What matters is that he himself helped his rivals win... What a peculiar story! What a freak!"

"Ji Mo, I can't stop admiring you..."

Ji Mo was utterly discomfited, "No, no, no, no... This isn't right. How could it be?"

The Chief in black said, "Tianji, why don't you explain it to him?"

I don't want him to be ill-affected."

Tianji smiled and blandly said, "Actually, the breakthrough in the delusion is never the point!"

Ji Mo burst in anger and started shouting, "What? What did you say? That is not the point, then what is? That can't be right. It is not what it was at all. No. It can't be!"

Tianji was casual and calm. He continued, "Ji Mo, you are also a superior cultivator in the universe. How could you talk like an ignorant fool? The delusion is created by us with our own energy, isn't it? How could anybody under our level possibly pass it?"

The others all nodded.

[Who could get pass the Disorientation Array that the nine of us created on our own?]

"The point of this challenge is never to make him break it in any proper way. It would be impossible to pass it by that. What he needed to do was simply defend himself from the impact of the delusion. In fact, to endure the impact of the delusion was already something he couldn't do. With his poor strength, it was impossible for him to actually do it. What he needed were luck, destiny, and fate.

"It is the truth. His special martial art is unique. It burst automatically and protected him from the first wave of impact. Then he passed the sword and saber scenes because of his good fortune. After that, he had a big resistance to the delusion. That supported him.

"Ji Mo, you saw the delusion and you thought that the only way for him to get out was to break the delusion. Doesn't it mean that you have put that man to the same height as us? Ridiculous! When Chief made a bet with you, the young man had survived from all those scenes. You actually accepted the wager. It means you were bound to lose. After all, all the young man had to do was to get

beyond his own limitation and break through to a new height. That brought him to safety from danger and made him pass the challenge. As the chosen person, the man who was blessed by heavens, the last thing he lacks is good fortune. All in all, you have lost a big one, but you deserve it."

...

Chapter 1054: Hard to Take Someone Down With Him

Ji Mo grouchily said, "You think you can fool me by just telling a long speech of nonsense? Just say something I can understand!"

"You silly pig!" The man who was also wearing black standing beside the Chief frowned and scolded, "Tianji means when Chief was making the bet with you, he knew he would win! He was taking advantage of you! Besides, in this universe, who do you think is powerful enough to break the delusion the nine of us created?"

"Even Chief Xie in his prime days may possibly fail to break it. That young man is just a little bit stronger than an ant... You actually can't understand it... I really want to punch you in the face. Tell me you are not wasting all those years you have been spent on cultivation..."

Bird Man laughed and said, "Stupid Ji Mo, you thought you took advantage of Chief, yet it turns out he has been taking advantage of you all the time. What a big loss for you and you shouldn't have lost it. Hahahaha..."

Ji Mo was stunned. He was an experienced cultivator too. Now that he was enlightened, he understood it immediately. What he felt next was regret. "I am so stupid...I really am... It is such a simple truth... Oh... I knew Chief will never bet on something he didn't have confidence in, but I still accepted it... I am such a pig..."

"Don't be so pessimistic. It may be a good thing as well." The man in black who was called Chief blandly said, "You two have been treating your daughter like she is the most valuable treasure of yours. After so many years, you still haven't found her a husband. You have to know that all girls should get married when she is in the proper age. Why do you keep her around you so crazily? Do you want your own daughter to live alone for her whole life? Is it

really what you want for her?"

Ji Mo lowered his head and said, "But... But... There is no man in the world who deserves my daughter..."

The others laughed and scolded, "You fool!"

Ji Mo made a long sigh. He was still in regret.

"Do you really have to be like this? Isn't it just to fight against Chief Xie for seven full days? He won't kill you after all... Why sigh like that?" Somebody disdainfully said, "Just grit your teeth and it will pass soon..."

"Bastard! Who says I am thinking about that! That seven days mean no sh*t to me..." Ji Mo raged up and then became downcast again. He mournfully said, "You all know about my wife... If she knows that I lost my girl's lifelong event just now... she would definitely kill me..."

The others were all speechless at the same time.

Apparently, they all remembered Ji Mo's tough wife. They actually looked a little pale in the face.

They obviously felt terrified about that tough woman.

"Right!" Ji Mo suddenly clapped and spoke in high spirits, "Brother, we haven't seen each other for a long time. Today, with sincerity, I invite you all to come to visit my home. Let's get some drinks and spent some wild time together..."

"Ahem!" Before Ji Mo finished, their Chief coughed and spoke seriously, "It is a great thing for us to be invited by a brother. We should pull off all other matters for that... However... Qingwu told me to do something for her... What is it? Anyways, it is quite important. Wife's matter is a matter beyond the heavens. I shouldn't have forgotten it... It must be this mess..."

He frowned and pretended to be lost in thoughts while walking fast away. - Shoot! - He was gone.

"Oh, I know! My sister... She... You should ask me... Why are you leaving so soon..." Wizard slapped on his own leg and said, "I have to tell him what my sister asked him to do... He can't screw that up..."

- Shoot! - He was gone too.

Bird Man started to laugh and said, "Holy hell! He is indeed the Wizard. He actually lied about something by making it sound like the truth! Wait... He can't do this... I have to catch up with him and tell him not to do it anymore. How can he do this to his own brothers? That is so dishonest. You guys stay here. Don't even think about taking the chance from my hand..."

Then he started to move as if he truly was going to catch up with Wizard...

Ji Mo sighed and said, "He is my real brother, unlike the other. The others value no brotherhood..."

The most good-looking one among the men sighed. "Oh, it turns out I am not a good brother for him. I see. I guess I should leave..."

- Shoot! - He was gone!

Ji Mo was stunned and said, "I didn't mean you... I truly didn't..."

The others all felt overjoyed and pretended to be angry. Somebody shouted, "You didn't mean him? So you mean we don't value brotherhood? Ji Mo, I can't believe you are talking about us. Finally, we see your true heart... This isn't done yet. Ji Mo, you should better spend some time alone to yourself. Do not come to us in three thousand years. We can't erase the grudge in our hearts in such a short time..."

Then they all left like birds flying away, leaving all troubles behind.

Ji Mo was shocked for a while and then was clear-headed. He shouted furiously, "Bastard, bastard, a bunch of bastards! You all disregarded our brotherhood... You defrauded me and left... You

know exactly what I meant, yet you passed the buck to me at the end... Bullsh*t erasing the grudge in your goddamn hearts... That can't be more absurd..."

He then turned over his head and saw one man who was still there.

Ji Mo, who was so upset, suddenly had his eyes lit up. He went forward to the remaining guy in an approachable way. "Ah! I knew Wolfy is the best. Come here. Let's go to my place and have some wonderful drinks... Just eat whatever you want to eat and drink whatever you wish to drink..."

He sighed. "You can only recognize the good grass in the strong wind, and the true hero in the chaotic time. Wolfy, I am so touched by your choice... I won't regret that we have shared happiness and woe together. I am sure now, you are my best brother..."

Wolfy just dumbly stood there. Suddenly, he started to shake, and a fierce aura appeared around him. He shouted with abuse, "Goddamn it, Rabbit! He actually blocked my Jing and Mai right before he left... It held me still! That... That... That is such an implacable hate..."

Ji Mo froze.

"Oh damn!" When Wolfy was shouting, he suddenly saw Ji Mo, so he started to tremble. He stopped shouting at once, then just ran away fast.

"Wait! Wait a minute!" Ji Mo grabbed his arm and begged humbly, "Brother, please, show me kindness... You are all I have now..."

"What are you doing? You said they knew what you meant, right? I am foolish and I don't know what you mean. Look. You only want them. I am the only one you don't want to stay with. Let go of me! Don't drag me!" Wolfy pretended to be angry, trying to get away!

"Holy hell! So now you are going to play the language games,

huh? No way! You are the only one I have now, kid! You can't leave! This is the last chance to show whether we are still brothers or not anymore!" Ji Mo shouted.

...

Chapter 1055: The Gate to Heavens Opened; Monarch Laughed Upon All

"Holy hell? I say holy hell! You call me kid yet claimed to be my brother! Who am I to you really?" Wolfy was looking for a flaw where there was none!

"Look, I can call you father if you stay!" Ji Mo would do whatever he could to get what he wanted now. He was grabbing Wolfy's hand as if he wouldn't let go even if all the mountains fell on him!

Wolfy seemed anxious about not getting away, so he shouted in anger, "Let go!"

"No!" Ji Mo finally got someone to grab. How could he just let him go?

"I am not going with you!"

"Yes! You have to!"

"I can't see your wife... She is going to beat me up to death... Brother! Beloved senior brother!" Wolfy begged, "You are my true brother! Please, spare my miserable life..."

Ji Mo was about to tear up. "Brother, you are the only brother I have now... As long as you come with me, you are my senior brother instead! Brother! Beloved brother! My beloved senior brother! Please help me..."

Wolfy's face turned pale. He suddenly trembled and then... - Bang! - His body turned into a wave of ash. A stream of red light fled away like lightning.

It was so fast that no words could describe it properly. He escaped like a stray dog or an escaping fish...

Ji Mo was holding an arm, and he was stunned.

After a while, he started to shout, "Damn you, Wolfy! That is

nasty! F*ck y... You actually exploded your physical body to avoid coming to help me... That is cruel! You are cruel!"

A voice echoed from a distance, "It is better to explode myself than to get beaten up by others... I am not going anyway..."

The voice became weaker and weaker before completely vanishing.

"Ahhhh... Just let me die..." Ji Mo exclaimed to the sky, angry and sad at the same time, "I am done. I am finished. Ahhhhh..."

From a distance, a person with a strapping body came slowly to him, "Ji Mo, what happened to you? Why are you exclaiming?"

Ji Mo suddenly became so gentle and flattering as he walked toward that person and spoke in a soft voice, "Oh, darling, my beloved wife... Why are you here?"

"Brother Three told me to come and pick you up... He said you have something you need to discuss with me..." That person spoke in confusion, "I thought that since Brother Three is such a steady man, you must have something urgent? What is it? Why do you look like this? Is anything wrong?"

"Mo Tianji you f*cking bloody wizard! I hate you..." Ji Mo felt like weeping but had no tears.

After a long time...

"What? What did you just say?" A shout shocked the entire universe, "Would you f*cking mind explaining to me again?"

And then... the sky changed color... the world was shaking... the light from the sun and the moon dimmed...

The three thousand years after that day, whoever happened to pass by this area would hear waves of deplorable exclamation sounding again and again like it would never stop... just like the cuckoo crying blood and the birds plaintively squawking...

...

In an extreme silence, Ye Xiao felt that his spiritual soul had been through a world-shocking concussion!

Then the fully operated East-rising Purple Qi was interrupted all of sudden. He immediately regained his consciousness.

From the corner of his eye, he saw a stream of purple light shoot into his head.

After that, he felt dizzy and couldn't help staggering before falling to the floor. That was awkward. He had never been so weary before in both of his lives.

In the Wood Space of Boundless Space, a small rock stele appeared, but then it exploded and became a purple light that illuminated the entire space...

Erhuo saw it and started to flick its whiskers. In its eyes, there was a light of extreme greediness...

It was all 'I want it, I want it, I want it, I want it' showing in its eyes!

Ye Xiao didn't know how long it had been since he passed out. He only felt so dizzy, and he felt like dreaming. A loud laughter sounded in the sky. As the laughter reverberated, Ye Xiao felt his body was falling down continuously.

He was floating. Was he still in the air?

"Go ahead! The gate to the heavens opens now; Monarch will laugh upon all. The moon hangs beyond the clouds; reach your hand to just take it..."

...

Han Bingxue worriedly walked forth and back while looking at the Mountain of All Medicines from time to time. He didn't try to disguise the anxiety in his face and even showed an extremely vicious desperation along with it.

"If Boss is not coming out for a longer time, I will break this

mountain into pieces! Save the man, keep the mountain. If the man dies, what do we keep the mountain for?"

He shouted.

"Break it?" Xuan Bing coldly sat before the mountain. She didn't seem anxious at all. She blandly said, "Not to mention you, even I, even with all the superior cultivators together, can never do anything with this mountain! It is impossible to even just crack it a little bit!"

Han Bingxue stomped fiercely, and the floor seemed to shake!

If anybody experienced in the world was here, they would definitely be terrified. That move, hmm, that stomp was powerful enough to destroy mountains and move the rivers!

Only real powerful figures in the world had such power!

Han Bingxue was a clever man. Of course, he knew Xuan Bing was right!

In fact, he had tried several times.

In other places, what he did was able to easily destroy a range of mountains at a time. However, no matter how hard he stomped, he couldn't break even a piece of rock.

He could never break the mountain.

"It has been one and a half month!" Han Bingxue was restlessly speaking, "What is happening on Boss's side? Is he alive? We have heard nothing about him... This is... This is driving me crazy..."

Xuan Bing blandly said, "Your boss will be fine."

"How do you know?" Han Bingxue punched a huge rock in front of him and angrily said, "One and a half month has passed, yet there is no information about him coming out! How did you know? Bloody mountain! Don't tell me bullsh*t like 'no news is better than bad news'! I don't buy it!"

Xuan Bing humphed and decided not to talk anymore. She just

sat there cross-legged and didn't move even a bit.

She looked calm and peaceful, waiting patiently, but deep in her heart, she was worried and anxious more than Han Bingxue was.

If Ye Xiao didn't come out, Xuan Bing might stay there for the rest of her life to wait. It was very likely she would just sit there waiting till the world ended.

[Master, please return safely!]

Xuan Bing didn't feel annoyed when she saw Han Bingxue pacing around again and again. Instead, she felt touched.

After all those days of observation, she could assure that Han Bingxue honestly saw Ye Xiao as his boss!

That couldn't be fake.

...

Chapter 1056: Han Bingxue Went Crazy

Han Bingxue was too emotional at the moment. He could barely cheat a three-year-old kid. That meant he was not plotting anything... or pretending anything...

Otherwise, she wouldn't spare him after saying those words!

Xuan Bing looked at Han Bingxue and thought for a while. She blandly said, "How's the view on the snow mountain?"

Han Bingxue lowered his head weakly and said, "Probably good. I didn't really pay attention."

"Was it cold?"

"Cold? How can I feel cold? I am indeed weaker than you, but I am still a superior cultivator myself..."

"Hmm. You must have killed a lot of people after you got down from the snow mountain, haven't you? Why?"

"Humph!"

"You were trying to avenge Xiao Monarch, weren't you?" Xuan Bing seemed to be hiding something behind her eyes.

"Sure." Han Bingxue humphed, "Everybody knows I was."

"Does it mean you are the Shadowless Assassin that has been recently hunting the three factions' disciples?" Xuan Bing said.

"What?"

Han Bingxue was shocked. He suddenly understood what Xuan Bing was doing.

Shadowless Assassin slaughtered people of the three factions to avenge Xiao Monarch. It was true, but it was a secret of him. Somebody suspected Han Bingxue was Shadowless Assassin, but nobody could make sure of it.

He was so emotional that he recklessly told Xuan Bing the truth.

However, since he was exposed, he wouldn't deny it anymore. After all, after all the days he spent with Xuan Bing, he could feel that Xuan Bing was not an enemy. He proudly said, "I am Shadowless Assassin, so what? Humph. In the world, only I can do that for him. I have killed a bunch of men to take revenge for Brother Ye, so what?"

Xuan Bing praised, "Not bad. You are a good brother to Ye Xiao."

Han Bingxue angrily said, "Back to the days, Brother Ye was hunted and slaughtered by the three factions. Nobody in the entire Qing-Yun Realm ever gave him a hand. I will never let the three factions go!"

"It is true. Xiao Monarch's death was... a tragedy." Xuan Bing sighed and said, "Xiao Monarch was a heroic figure. Yet he died in such misery. How mournful!"

Han Bingxue deeply breathed and said, "My Brother Ye was more than just a heroic man. He spent his life doing the right thing, living in justice, fighting with love and hatred! He was a great hero!"

Xuan Bing didn't deny it. She just went along Han Bingxue's words, "That's true! Xiao Monarch was always righteous. He never did anything rascal. What a man. It's a pity he is dead..."

"Who says he is dead! Nonsense... Urh!" Han Bingxue suddenly shut up and stared at Xuan Bing with his eyes widely opened, big as two brass bells.

Xuan Bing was still sitting there, not even moving a bit. Her eyes looked through the black silk on her face and stared at Han Bingxue with a hint of joy.

Coldness abruptly exploded out of Han Bingxue as he put one hand on his sword handle. He coldly said, "Elder Xuan, I never know you are not only brilliant in cultivation but also incredible in baiting."

Xuan Bing blandly said, "Hmm. Just so-so! What now? Do you admit it?"

Han Bingxue coldly said, "Admit? What do I admit? I just wanted to say Xiao Monarch was not only a hero but also a dominator of the world! Do you believe it, great elder?"

Xuan Bing just smiled and didn't respond.

She actually just kept silent.

However, as Xuan Bing remained silence, Han Bingxue felt more unconfident. He angrily said, "Why don't you say something? Don't you want to make me say something?"

Xuan Bing shook her head and stayed silent.

Han Bingxue felt that he was making a huge mistake. He raged up and shouted, "Xuan Bing! I am going to kill you!"

- Clang! - His longsword went out of the scabbard. Suddenly, the clouds were rolling in the strong wind! His killing intent was rolling up in the sky!

Han Bingxue's murderous aura rose up to the peak!

It didn't matter whether Xuan Bing was the great elder of Misty Cloud Palace or not, whether she was the second most powerful cultivator in the realm or not, whether he could defeat her or not, he only thought about killing her! He would die with her if he needed to. He had to keep the secret for Ye Xiao!

The cold sword light suddenly shined up the sky like moonlights and then fiercely struck down on Xuan Bing.

That was a one-way attack that he would only make to do an instant kill!

He was a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator, but he was still one step away from the top range in Qing-Yun Realm. That one step meant a difference between heaven and hell. However, if simply speaking of the aura of him when he made this attack, with

which he was willing to sacrifice himself, nobody in the realm was better than him or dared to fight against him!

"You must die!" Han Bingxue shouted. He merged with his sword and made the cold moonlight of the sword into a long splendidly glowing dragon, shooting toward Xuan Bing.

Xuan Bing was surprised when she saw it.

She never expected Han Bingxue would have such a drastic reaction. They had traveled together for a long time after all, yet he decided to ignore it when she was going to reveal the secret he kept. Most importantly, she knew Han Bingxue was going crazy.

He was exactly going crazy, not almost, not likely!

"You want to kill me? Are you capable enough?" Xuan Bing sneered and then flew up like a blast of a dark cloud. Her body turned into a mass of dark fog, rolling away in the dense sword lights. However, none of the fierce sword lights that Han Bingxue made to cover the sky ever touched her body.

Han Bingxue's sudden attack could suppress most of the superior cultivators in the realm, but Xuan Bing was not included!

No matter how fierce his attack was, no matter how he was willing to give up his life, he could do no harm to her!

Han Bingxue realized that his forcible attack didn't work, so he gritted his teeth and abruptly operated all of his spiritual power. He shouted, "All In Destruction!"

Xuan Bing was terrified, so she hurriedly shouted, "Wait!"

All In Destruction was Han Bingxue's unique skill. Once he ran it, he would become ten times stronger immediately, but it would burn his life. It merged his soul, life energy, physical body, and spiritual mind into one whole, as the energy that the final attack would consume.

In other words, it was a move that would damage himself first

before it injured the enemy. No matter whether it could kill the enemy or not, he was sure to be damaged!

In the Qing-Yun Realm, there were lots of people who were stronger than Han Bingxue. However, there were not many people who could defend the ten times power aggregation of Han Bingxue!

Unfortunately, Xuan Bing was exactly one of the 'not many people'. Even though Han Bingxue had made his All In Destruction, Xuan Bing was sure she could safely escape from the attack because of the absolute disparity between their powers. In fact, she could directly kill Han Bingxue by attacking back on him.

The problem was that even though Han Bingxue was hostile to Xuan Bing, Xuan Bing didn't mean to hurt him at all. It was more annoying that once Han Bingxue made that last strike, no matter what he could get in return, he was definitely going to die!

...

Chapter 1057: Bing'er, Is It You?

Even if all the gods in heaven descended, they weren't able to save him!

If he was somebody else, Xuan Bing wouldn't care. However, he was Ye Xiao's sworn brother, a good brother who could give up his life for Ye Xiao immediately.

If Han Bingxue died, how would Xuan Bing explain to Ye Xiao?

And he would be dead for her mistake...

Xuan Bing was sure that if Han Bingxue died and Ye Xiao realized who she was, he wouldn't fight her, but definitely wouldn't forgive her either!

Han Bingxue had gone mad. His eyes were red in color. He had completely given up on his life.

Xuan Bing honestly felt regretful.

Everything was fine earlier, yet why did she have to prove Ye Xiao's identity?

Wasn't it asking for troubles?

Han Bingxue looked cold in the face. The spiritual qi in the world crazily gathered over to him all of a sudden.

All In Destruction was starting.

If he successfully started this technique, it meant he started the route to death from which he could never return!

The spiritual qi in this place was energetic. Nobody could easily capture or use it. However, Han Bingxue's suicide attack could. Such a technique didn't even protect the cultivator's life, so how could it stop capturing the energetic spiritual qi?

"Are you insane? Stop it now!" Xuan Bing shouted in anger.

"No matter what, you have to die! I would love to die with the

secret! Let's die together!" Han Bingxue's face was turning more pallid. The look in his eyes was fiercer and fiercer.

When All In Destruction was started, the only way to stop it was if Han Bingxue decided to. There was no other way!

Xuan Bing's eyes turned red because of anxiety. She rushed ahead, trying to forcibly stop Han Bingxue.

However, that meant she was risking her own life to save his. If Xuan Bing stopped him in time, he would survive. If she did it after the starting process was done, Han Bingxue would die, and Xuan Bing would have to pay an unbearable price.

After all, what Xuan Bing was going to do was to prevent Han Bingxue from making that suicide attack. It was quite different from dodging and striking back. She would have to confront the ten times stronger attack of Han Bingxue in a tough way. Even though she was much stronger than Han Bingxue, she would still have to pay a huge painful price for that!

However, at this moment, something unexpected happened...

A wave of energy fluctuation came from the sky. It seemed something was falling rapidly from above...

The two of them glanced up while preparing for battle. They both saw a figure falling from the clouds.

That was exactly Ye Xiao!

At the critical moment, Ye Xiao, who had been missing for a long time, actually fell from the sky!

Xuan Bing stopped and looked up. Han Bingxue was stunned. He actually forgot to continue the technique. He raised up his head in surprise. "Boss?"

In the sky, Ye Xiao was turning bigger and bigger in their sights, falling down like a shooting meteorite.

They both realized something wrong. It seemed Ye Xiao was in a

coma at the moment! It would be Mars hitting the earth if he fell down like that!

Xuan Bing moved in advance. She jumped up roughly one thousand meters high, moving rapidly in the sky, reaching out both her hands and supporting Ye Xiao on the back. As she touched him, the huge blast hit her too. The momentum of falling was difficult to defend. Even though she was already so powerful, she couldn't help letting out a whimper of pain. As she was falling down so fast, she still kept holding Ye Xiao tightly, trying to reduce the overwhelming momentum. She even let out a second mass of spiritual qi to wrap Ye Xiao up, in case the strong friction damaged his body. She was indeed thoughtful and caring for Ye Xiao.

However, the momentum of falling was so powerful. Xuan Bing had made her full effort, yet she still couldn't slow him down. They had fallen over half a thousand meters in an instant, yet they still didn't seem to slow down.

"Up!"

A strange wave of energy appeared on Xuan Bing's body, and then there showed up the white fog...

It was exactly the most powerful martial art of Misty Cloud Palace, Ling Xiao Ice Art!

Xuan Bing had been covering her face in the dark fog all along the way she traveled with Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue. Now, she finally started her real power, yet it appeared to be some white-colored fog!

Supported by her marvelous martial art, they stopped falling. Instead, they actually rose up a few meters. After that, Xuan Bing held Ye Xiao in the arms and slowly descended to the floor.

Even though things were under her control in the end, she still sweated with fear for what had just happened.

Luckily, Ye Xiao finally came out in time. If he came out later,

Han Bingxue might have activated All In Destruction...

He might have died!

That was close!

That was so close!

Han Bingxue ran over to them in a hurry. "How is he?"

He was obviously so worried, not fierce anymore.

Xuan Bing furiously slapped him on the head and said, "You idiot! Why don't you keep fighting me? Go ahead? Fight me with your life? Go kill yourself?"

Han Bingxue was abruptly slapped, so he was angry. "I will have a life and death fight against you when Boss wakes up!"

"Do more stupid things and I will kill your boss right now!" Xuan Bing just started to threaten.

Looking at Ye Xiao, who was staying in Xuan Bing's arms, Han Bingxue calmed down. He realized he had no other choice. He madly said, "Is it what you are capable of? Bullying a man who is unconsciousness? Is the great elder of Misty Cloud Palace really this despicable?"

"Humph!" Xuan Bing humphed and turned over. She didn't want to talk with the idiot anymore.

She hurriedly checked on Ye Xiao.

She had indeed touched him earlier, but she touched him to slow down and reduce the momentum of falling. She didn't have time to check Ye Xiao's condition. As she finally checked on him carefully, she discovered he was fine and only in a coma. He would wake up soon... She felt relieved and murmured, "You are such a destined enemy..."

Ye Xiao was still unconscious after leaving the fourth layer of the Mountain of All Medicine and falling down from the sky. During that time, he still felt like dreaming.

However, when Xuan Bing caught him, he felt so familiar with her from the bottom of his heart.

It was absolutely a warm hug of her, and it was... such a familiar hug for him.

The scent... of her was also... so familiar!

Now, he was drowsily murmuring, "Bing'er? Is it you?"

Xuan Bing was checking on him when she heard it. She trembled and let loose of her hands out of shock. Ye Xiao, as expected, hit the floor because of the gravity.

...

Chapter 1058: Something Wrong

Han Bingxue, who was standing aside, stared at Xuan Bing and said, "Why did you throw my boss?"

He didn't believe Xuan Bing would accidentally make such a stupid mistake considering how powerful she was. Since it wasn't an accident, she must have done it on purpose!

Xuan Bing really didn't have time to explain it to the idiot, so she just rolled her eyes up and stepped backward. She sat in meditation dozens of meters away and stayed still as if she had never moved.

She looked indifferent, but her heart was beating so hard. Her entire body turned soft all of a sudden.

If she didn't wear her silk mask, a tinge of red could be seen on her cheeks, as if she was drunk. Even her eyes looked bewitched...

[Master...]

She called him in the heart.

Then she felt bewitched.

She was even a bit regretful.

[Does it make me happier to be a dominant figure who commands the world or to be a maid of a beloved man?]

Between the two entirely different options which were not comparable, none of the average people would choose the latter.

However, Xuan Bing, the powerful cultivator who conquered the world actually felt hesitating, struggling, and lost.

She even regretted that her true heart had woken up too early!

In other words, deep down her heart, she preferred the former option!

It was unimaginable for Xuan Bing to take the latter option. Xuan Bing had an absolutely different personality from Bing-Er.

However, even though it was unexpected, it was unreasonable to take that option!

Xuan Bing lost her parents when she was a child and had been through a miserable childhood. When she was a child, she met her private master. After that, she had been rising smoothly for a long time. However, she was the only person in the world who knew exactly how difficult it was to become what she was. She had nearly died for many times.

A man in the martial art would have to risk his life, let alone a woman.

She had been through so much to reach a position upon the clouds. In her memory, she only remembered herself laughing when she was praised by her master... That aside, she didn't have much memory of any other joyful matter.

In her entire life, what she lacked the most was care.

Even when she was with her master, she couldn't feel care from her master. Her master had high expectations for her, so her master never gave her even a smile, only treated her in a pretty strict way.

Although she understood her master's expectations, she still felt regret and was pushed in a setback!

If Xuan Bing had to talk about the happiest days of her life, she would say the time when she lost her memory.

It was a short period of time, and she was severely injured. She was entirely much worse than who she used to be. However, in those days, following Ye Xiao, she could laugh as loudly as she wanted, and enjoy the meticulous caring.

She was loved.

The young lord clearly remembered what flavor she liked.

He never treated her as a maid but as his... sister, his woman.

Xuan Bing missed the sweet taste in the memory more and more every night after she dreamed about it.

After she left that place, after she left that man, she actually lost that sweet feeling.

When she met Ye Xiao again this time, the sweet feeling that she had long missed hit her heart. She was pretty thrilled. How could she just leave? How could she just let go of it?

However, Ye Xiao became more and more suspicious of her. What he wondered, no matter whether he asked for it unconsciously or on purpose...

It made Xuan Bing rattled.

"Bing'er!" Suddenly, Ye Xiao shouted and then opened his eyes in confusion.

Xuan Bing heard it. She was shocked and hurriedly looked away with a fluttery feeling.

Regrettably, such an obvious move was ignored entirely by Ye Xiao who had just woken up. Han Bingxue focused on Ye Xiao wholeheartedly, so he didn't see it either. In fact, even if he did, he wouldn't understand!

Ye Xiao slowly opened his eyes and saw Han Bingxue's happy face right in front of him! Their faces were about ten centimeters away from each other!

Wasn't it close?

It was very possibly less than ten centimeters!

That was constrainedly acceptable, but Han Bingxue was holding him tight in the arms and shouting in anxiety, "Boss! Are you alright? Boss, how are you feeling? Don't scare me! What do I do if you die?"

Ye Xiao nearly passed out again when he heard Han Bingxue's embarrassing words.

He remembered he had been held by Bing'er when he was lost in muddiness. How come he saw Han Bingxue when he opened his eyes?

Han Bingxue even shouted embarrassing words to him!

That moment, Ye Xiao sincerely wished that he could stay in a coma for a longer time, at least to pass the embarrassment!

Han Bingxue totally had no idea what he was doing. He just kept shouting in anxiety, showing his thoughtful car to Ye Xiao in a passionate way.

Ye Xiao's eyes nearly popped out. He slightly turned his head away and looked awkward. [I honestly can't bear your nagging... You prick, can you just shout as you wish but don't spurt your saliva on my face...]

[I feel like it is raining on my face... what the hell are you doing?]

[Washing my face? To clear my mind?]

"Just shut your mouth now. I am fine..." Ye Xiao speechlessly looked away and said, "And quick, put me down."

Han Bingxue hurriedly put him down on the floor and said, "Boss, run your martial art to check inside yourself first. Just check how your physical condition is. Did you get hurt inside?"

Ye Xiao rolled up his eyes and speechlessly asked, "Who caught me when I was falling down?"

Xuan Bing blandly said on the side, "Who except your good brother would do that?"

Han Bingxue wanted to say something but felt a fierce and robust stream of qi rushing over to him. He trembled and said, "That's right, Boss. I caught you."

Ye Xiao looked at him with suspicion. "Really? Was it really you?"

Han Bingxue smiled and said, "Yes. Really."

Ye Xiao raised his head up, looked at Han Bingxue, and reached out his hand to touch Han Bingxue's chest, murmuring, "Was it truly you? Did you catch me? No way... Something is missing here... It touches so differently..."

Han Bingxue's face twitched. He seemed to laugh but didn't dare. Deep in his heart, some weird emotion rose up...

Apparently, not only Han Bingxue's words were embarrassing, but also Ye Xiao's moves!

However, when Xuan Bing saw Ye Xiao doing that, she felt like passing out because of anger!

[What are you bastard trying to touch?]

...

Chapter 1059: Standardized Cultivating Tea

Xuan Bing thrust up and shouted, "Hey! That's enough! You are not focusing on the right point! Since you can clearly talk, just tell us everything. What we care most is what you have been through within the month in there? What is the situation there? How did you get out earlier? Why would you fall from the sky as Han Bingxue did? Is that space enjoying throwing people into the sky or throwing people to death?"

A series of questions drew Ye Xiao's attention.

However, Xuan Bing was frightened by the situation that she asked about in the last question. Ye Xiao suddenly appeared in the sky and fell down from the sky. Luckily, she was quite close to him, and that gave her the chance to save him from the wallop of falling with her full power. However, considering how mighty that wallop was, even if Han Bingxue had time to react and dashed up to catch Ye Xiao, he might save Ye Xiao's life, but both of them would be injured. Ye Xiao was only level seven of Dream Origin Stage. Even the after effect of the momentum could damage his inner organs and Jing and Mai. He would substantially regress. Han Bingxue would at least suffer a reverse impact of his internal energy!

Xuan Bing's words alerted Ye Xiao. It reminded him of all the adventure earlier. He hurriedly checked on himself and found a white stele in his spiritual mind.

When he saw that stele, it exploded into purple qi in the sky.

The next moment, the purple qi gathered together and became a piece of jade stele again. However, no matter how it spread and gathered, again and again, the purple qi didn't go away. It filled the Wood Space of Boundless Space.

Ye Xiao didn't know how spacious the Wood Space had become. All he knew was that he couldn't see the boundary of it when standing inside.

The medicines inside the space were all flourishing. When Ye Xiao glanced at the Wood Space, he found that the lotuses that he collected and planted together inside, which covered about one hundred acres of land, were all enveloped by that dense purple qi.

Thousands of lotuses that were already evolved into Regeneration Jade Lotus had become more crystal-like. It seemed they were going to become Renaissance Jade Lotus soon. There were tens of thousand more lotuses which remained Regeneration Ink Lotus. Ninety percent of them had become whitish. It meant they were going to become Regeneration Jade Lotus soon.

How long had it only taken?

Regeneration Lotus was tremendously meaningful to Misty Cloud Palace. However, Misty Cloud Palace never dared to tell others how the lotuses truly mattered to them.

In fact, such lotus didn't have much medical value unless they were at least Regeneration Jade Lotus or higher level. People would love to chase Regeneration Jade Lotus, but it took not only time for such a lotus to evolve, but also luck. That was why there were not many people planting such lotus. For the same reason, there were not many Regeneration Ink Lotus in the fourth layer of Mountain of All Medicines.

Ye Xiao had mainly searched for it, and he only got about one hundred acres of it. What he got were all average-quality lotuses. However, even though the lotuses were all in average quality, they were all going to become Regeneration Jade Lotus! How weird!

He couldn't understand why the lotuses evolved so fast. Other than that, when he glanced at the Heaven's Cyan, which changed into Tree of Cultivating Tea, it had grown half bigger within one night. The entire tree became lusher than before, and it covered over thirty meters wide! The bole which used to be as thick as a bowl could now fit the arms of a man hugging it.

The Tree of Cultivating Tea was like a giant umbrella standing

right there.

Every leaf was shining.

It was such great luck when he got Heaven's Cyan back in the old days. At that time, Heaven's Cyan was merely in its infancy but was already over nine thousand years old. Because of the nourishment from the spiritual qi in Boundless Space, it skipped the hardship of countless years within a few days and became Tree of Cultivating Tea. It jumped from infancy and became Tree of Cultivating Tea that could produce Cultivating Tea!

However, in the beginning, although the Cultivating Tea it produced was already magnificently valuable, it wasn't the typical Cultivating Tea, but only Heart Cultivating Tea. It should take another thousand years of sharpening to become the real Cultivating Tea!

The Tree of Cultivating Tea in front of him was much older than a thousand years. In fact, considering the status of the shining leaves, it should be not far from ten thousand years old.

When the leaves became golden, the real Cultivating Tea would become the ultimate type, Heaven Cultivating Tea!

Tree of Cultivation Tea produced Heart Cultivating Tea when it was younger than a thousand years old. After that, it created the standardized Cultivating Tea. When it was over ten thousand years old, it produced Heaven Cultivating Tea!

That was what people said 'thousand years to cultivate one's heart, ten thousand years to cultivate one's nature, and cultivated nature leads to heavens!'

Cultivating Tea was rare to find. It was also difficult to plant the tree of it. Even when somebody was lucky enough to get one, they were always too impatient to wait for ten thousand years! People might be patient enough to skip the Heart Cultivating Tea and wait for a thousand years, but they would collect it as soon as it became

one thousand years old!

After all, it took totally ten thousand years to become Heaven Cultivating Tea. Within the nine thousand years before that, the standardized Cultivating Tea wouldn't be improved in quality a bit!

Ye Xiao's Heart Cultivating Tea had become standardized Cultivating Tea and nearly reached the level of Heaven Cultivating Tea. It was a delightful thing to him. However...

"This doesn't seem right..." Ye Xiao grumbled, "When I watched Heaven's Cyan become Tree of Cultivating Tea, I realized the special power of Boundless Space was the main reason it grew so fast... But how long has it been since then? Roughly two years... How is it possible that it just grew into such a big tree in such a short time? Is it... Is it truly the Tree of Cultivating Tea that is known to be difficult to grow? Does my Boundless Space truly have such a magnificent power? Or is there something else behind this? I never saw it grow so fast ever..."

When he was lost in confusion, he suddenly got enlightened. He shouted, "What did you just say? I have stayed in that place for one and a half month?"

Han Bingxue covered his own face and said, "Boss, come on, Boss... You don't even know how long you have been in there? Impressive!"

Ye Xiao was blank. "I truly have no idea. I stayed clear-minded for the first three days as I can remember... Then I was lost in unconsciousness until just now..."

He then suddenly stopped.

He suddenly recalled the memory of that sword strike which sliced the firmament and the saber that cut the sky and earth!

Also, the golden dragon which traversed the universe and the phoenix that hovered in the heavens... There was also the image of

the beautiful, amazing flowers that filled the entire space.

...

Chapter 1060: A Thousand Jade Lotuses!

What kind of power? What kind of mighty people?

Ye Xiao felt terrified when he just gave a thought about it!

Xuan Bing pretended to be impatient and said, "Little Brother Ye, what is wrong with you? Why are you so foolish? I heard that Han Bingxue went to the fourth layer with you, where there were many valuable materials. I guess you must have gotten a huge fortune since you have stayed there for a long time. I wonder how many lotuses you have collected?"

Apparently, she was trying to lead the conversation to a different topic.

"Uh... Regeneration Ink lotus..." It reminded Ye Xiao that Xuan Bing was not only just a companion to him and Han Bingxue on the journey, but also the Prime Great Elder of Misty Cloud Palace. What Misty Cloud Palace needed most was the lotus.

"Unfortunately, I didn't get any Regeneration Ink Lotus..." Ye Xiao calmly lied.

"What?" Xuan Bing widely opened her eyes.

She started the conversation just to change the topic, but she couldn't believe Ye Xiao actually didn't get any Regeneration Ink Lotus during the stay in there for such a long time.

Ye Clan and Li Clan had collected many lotuses only in the third layer, which were all in sound quality. Ye Xiao, who was lucky to be in the fourth layer, actually didn't get even one lotus?

"I truly didn't get any Regeneration Ink Lotus, but I got some Regeneration Jade Lotus." Ye Xiao blinked to Xuan Bing, "Quite a lot."

Xuan Bing was surprised and then she tried so hard not to rage up. She genuinely wanted to beat him up hard right away.

"Regeneration Jade Lotus? Quite a lot? How many?" Xuan Bing squinted at him and humphed and said, "Over ten or dozens?"

For her, it would be great that Ye Xiao could collect dozens, even just over ten lotuses. After all, there was not a lot of Regeneration Ink Lotus that were shown in Qing-Yun Realm.

She had searched for the lotuses all around the realm, and all she got were merely dozens of it. Although Han Bingxue had lavishly praised the fourth layer, he had never brought out anything valuable. Xuan Bing thought that even though Ye Xiao should have brought out something worthwhile, he could never get more than she collected in her life!

"Dozens?" Ye Xiao frowned, "Dozens doesn't make it quite a lot!"

"More?" Xuan Bing kept the eyes open, "Over a hundred?" She was pleased. If there were over a hundred Regeneration Jade Lotus, it could solve a massive problem for Misty Cloud Palace.

Misty Cloud Palace needed the lotuses because their lotus garden was destroyed in an accident a few years earlier. All their disciples who were cultivating Ling Xiao Ice Art stopped the progress in cultivation, but they were getting closer to death day by day.

Wenren Chuchu needed only Regeneration Ink Lotus to be free from the impact, but Bing Xinyue needed Regeneration Jade Lotus. Elders like Xuan Bing had to use Renascence Jade Lotus!

Regeneration Ink Lotus was difficult to plant, and it didn't have much medical value. That was why people didn't attach importance to it in Qing-Yun Realm. Misty Cloud Palace intentionally collected the three types of lotuses and even sent out their people to the lower realms to find the lotuses in the recent few years. No other forces ever knew what they were doing!

After a few years, they had collected lots of Regeneration Ink Lotus, at least one thousand. However, as for Regeneration Jade Lotus, they got less than fifty, most of which were collected by

Xuan Bing with good luck in the third layer of Mountain of All Medicines.

That was why she thought it would be fortunate if Ye Xiao could get dozens of it. Yet Ye Xiao told her much more.

If Ye Xiao was telling her the truth, at least a lot of the elders in the leadership of Misty Cloud Palace could be saved.

Weak disciples like Wenren Chuchu would need one whole plant of Regeneration Ink Lotus. However, Regeneration Jade Lotus was over a hundred times more efficient than Regeneration Ink Lotus. A few elders only needed to share one plant of the lotus.

Xuan Bing was overjoyed when she heard Ye Xiao!

"Not only over a hundred." Ye Xiao shook his head.

Xuan Bing gritted her teeth and said, "Hundreds?"

"More." Ye Xiao grinned and looked so wretched and dirty.

Xuan Bing nearly passed out.

[Why does he keep tantalizing me? What does that mean? Does he think he can control me like this?]

[Besides, I don't believe there are over a thousand Regeneration Jade Lotus in the fourth layer!]

[Even if there are, how long would it take Ye Xiao, who is so weak, to find every plant in some inconspicuous plots? He has been there for one and half a month. Even if he had one and half a year, or fifteen years, he might still not be able to collect them all!]

[It is impossible!]

The truth was not as she could think about though. The fact was that Ye Xiao honestly had an unbelievable amount of Regeneration Jade Lotus!

In fact, he had planted lots of the lotuses in his Space which were in even better quality. Those were things that he was intentionally

raising. Other than that, he had spent three days in the fourth layer of Mountain of All Medicines to find the lotuses. A thousand plants of Regeneration Ink Lotus were absolutely not a problem!

He didn't even need to make any effort, and the lotuses would appear in his hand.

"Just be frank. How many do you have?" Xuan Bing gritted her teeth. If it weren't Ye Xiao, she would definitely kill this man.

Ye Xiao didn't dare to keep making fun of her since he saw that she was going to rage up. Regeneration Jake Lotus, such a high-class material, didn't mean much for Ye Xiao. However, Misty Cloud Palace would rob and kill for it!

He thought for a while, laughed, and said, "There must be over a thousand of it. I didn't count. Roughly a thousand."

When he spent a moment to think, he wasn't pretending. He was carefully thinking how many he should take out. After all, it would be inappropriate to take out all he had. It would lead to big troubles after all...

That was why he decided to answer with roughly one thousand. He thought, [It should be not too many but also not too few, right? It won't induce crime!]

However, he was wrong about it.

He knew Misty Cloud Palace needed it. He knew how much it meant to Misty Cloud Palace!

However, he also knew that Misty Cloud Palace was still a dominant force in the realm. Though it didn't return to be the first sect yet, it was more or less the most powerful. Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu had told him once that many of their people had given up on Ling Xiao Ice Art and focused on cultivating the secondary martial arts. That was why he thought there weren't many people of Misty Cloud Palace that needed the lotuses.

...

Chapter 1061: A Gift to You!

Ye Xiao thought that at least Misty Cloud Palace was still able to keep running.

One thousand seemed to be a lot, but he believed it wouldn't be too stunning.

However, he didn't know the real situation of Misty Cloud Palace. They had been in a desperate situation. Not to mention one thousand, even one hundred was an incredible amount for Misty Cloud Palace these days!

Most importantly, it was Regeneration Jade Lotus, not Regeneration Ink Lotus!

"One thousand..." Xuan Bing even felt dazed when she heard the number.

[One thousand? How come? How is it possible?]

[Is he making a mistake? Is he mistaking normal white lotuses for Regeneration Jade Lotus?]

[This is the only explanation for such an unbelievable number!]

Deep in her heart, however, she would really love to believe Ye Xiao did have a thousand plants of Regeneration Jade Lotus. Even if it were a dream of her, she would like to wake up later. However, the rationality of her mind kept telling her that she had to make sure of it since it concerned the future of Misty Cloud Palace!

"I don't believe it!" Xuan Bing humphed.

"I know you wouldn't believe it. That's why I have prepared a small gift for you, Miss Xuan." Ye Xiao said, "You have been traveling with us and supported us a lot. I believe it is destiny that brought us here. These lotuses represent my humble gratitude. Please accept it..."

He reached out his right hand and turned the palm up. A dark

old-time space ring was in his hand.

Xuan Bing didn't hesitate. She reached out one hand, grabbed the ring, and hurriedly opened it...

"Ah!"

She couldn't help making an exclamation.

As such a powerful and steady cultivator, she actually exclaimed. It proved how shocking it was to her. It indeed stunned her.

When she opened the ring, she knew what was inside the ring space!

A lot of... Regeneration Jade Lotus!

She didn't believe it, so she kept looking into it again and again until she finally confirmed that there were one thousand plants of Regeneration Jade Lotus!

It was true!

The light scent, the color and luster of white jade, and the glowing introverted lights in the texture of the petal!

What else could it be other than Regeneration Jade Lotus?

There weren't just one or two plants, ten or eight plants, or a hundred or eighty plants! There were one thousand!

The number shocked Xuan Bing!

After she held the ring in hand and confirmed the number, she was stunned.

"It is... It is real..." She took a deep breath and couldn't believe what her spiritual mind had sensed. She unconsciously wanted to take off the mask and take a close look with her eyes.

Influential people like her had gotten used to observe things with their spiritual minds. However, at this moment, she wanted to check on it with her own eyes!

Ye Xiao was staring at her hand.

The next moment, Xuan Bing's hand, which had been holding the ring and becoming pale because it grabbed the ring so hard, was loosening up.

"It turns out to be the real Regeneration Jade Lotus. A lot of it." Xuan Bing sounded calm and peaceful again, "Young Brother Ye, I, Xuan Bing, appreciate what you did for all my sisters in Misty Cloud Palace."

As she said so, the relation between them had changed. She had called Ye Xiao Little Brother Ye. It was more like teasing him, but in a genial way. In addition, it showed her arrogance from the upper position to the lower. When she called him Young Brother Ye, although it was just a difference of one word, she talked to him as the great Prime Elder of Misty Cloud Palace. That showed her respect for Ye Xiao. She was talking to him in an equal position, instead of looking down upon him.

However, it covered the intimacy between them. It was hard to tell whether they were more intimate or alienated from each other.

In fact, it was a surprising outcome but a reasonable result. When Ye Xiao didn't know who Xuan Bing was, Xuan Bing knew precisely who Ye Xiao was. It seemed they were in different positions, but Xuan Bing had been getting close to Ye Xiao in a secret way. She didn't dare to let him know after all. Now, Ye Xiao gave her a thousand plants of Regeneration Jade Lotus, which meant a great favor for Misty Cloud Palace that seemed to be still tough and mighty but was actually falling to weakness. Xuan Bing was the Prime Elder of Misty Cloud Palace. She couldn't get along with Ye Xiao in a private way. She had to respect Ye Xiao as the Prime Elder who represented Misty Cloud Palace!

It was only Xuan Bing's concern, and even Ye Xiao didn't truly understand!

Things were always hard to predict!

"Miss Xuan, you are being too polite." Ye Xiao rubbed his nose

and talked politely. However, he felt regret in his heart.

He still didn't see the face of Elder Xuan.

"You are sincerely giving these to me, and these things mean quite a lot to Misty Cloud Palace. I guess I should just indecorously accept them." Xuan Bing blandly smiled and gracefully said, "However, I don't think we can just take such largess as granted."

Ye Xiao sincerely said, "Miss Xuan, you have traveled along with us. Your mighty name has been easing our nerves. My brother and I will never forget your support. You deserve everything I am giving you."

Xuan Bing blandly smiled and didn't answer. She couldn't help feeling a sense of indescribable melancholy.

Regeneration Jade Lotus was never the reason why she traveled with them!

Now that she got so many plants of Regeneration Jade Lotus, she lost a good reason to stay at the same time. She had to leave.

In Misty Cloud Palace, her sisters were waiting for the life-saving lotuses. No matter what, she couldn't be a selfish person.

When would they meet again after she left?

[Master, am I really leaving? I... I don't have any reason to stay with you anymore...]

The conversation between them was ended. The talky Han Bingxue naturally kept asking Ye Xiao about the mysterious Mountain of All Medicines. However, even Ye Xiao didn't really understand what had happened. How could he clearly say it out?

According to what he knew, it seemed the Mountain of All Medicines was refined and commandeered by him. It belonged to him now.

However, the mountain was still standing there, reaching up to the sky, surrounded by clouds and mist. It was still there!

It was apparently not a delusion. It was real.

What was going on?

Ye Xiao was confused.

He had to believe that such an unbelievable, incredible, and incomprehensible event was the outcome of those super mighty figures' marvelous skills!

Besides, it was not a good time to keep thinking about this problem...

The three of them got back on the road again, and none of them talked.

When they had walked out over a hundred miles, they smelled blood in the air. The three of them all felt it. When they tried to find something, they saw some flesh and bones in pieces hidden in the bushes.

Apparently, a deadly battle had happened in this place.

It was so drastic that even after such a long time, the blood stains were still fresh.

...

Chapter 1062: So Long For Now

"What happened here?" Ye Xiao asked.

"What else could it be? Your Ye Clan and their Li Clan had a dog-to-dog fight. Both sides were hurt." Han Bingxue rolled his eyes up and said, "They had a big fight on the first day they came out. That was such a noise... However, we didn't have time for their stupid fight."

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly.

He honestly didn't know how he would face the situation in Ye Clan yet.

However, Ye Nantian was in the clan after all.

No matter what, Ye Nantian was technically his father, to whom he was deeply indebted. Ye Xiao figured it would be inhumane not to help him!

There was a small town ahead of them.

"Let's settle in that town for tonight." Ye Xiao said.

They were not far from Ye Clan's house though. If they kept moving at full speed, even though Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue had to wait for Ye Xiao who was much weaker, it wouldn't take them more than fifteen minutes to arrive. However, Ye Xiao chose to stop and settle in that small town.

In his heart, he was apparently still struggling.

He was even a bit hesitating.

"Well. Let me pay for dinner tonight. Tomorrow morning, I will have to leave. I don't know when we will meet again," Xuan Bing blandly said.

However, she couldn't cover the disconsolateness in her heart.

"Are you leaving?" Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue both looked at her.

Xuan Bing smiled and said, "All feasts must end. I am here to search for Regeneration Ink Lotus. Now, I have gotten many plants of Regeneration Jade Lotus. What a surprising fortune! Countless people are waiting for me in Misty Cloud Palace. I have to return as soon as I can. We have many lotuses now. I guess we will have our Renaissance Garden back soon."

She tried so hard to control herself to make her voice sound indifferent and cold.

"When we meet again in the future in the martial world, I can promise you one thing, Little Brother Ye. As long as I am capable of it, I will do anything you ask."

Her eyes looked through the mask and stared at Ye Xiao. She repeated in a firm tone, "Anything!"

She took a deep breath and said, "Even if you ask me to wipe out the seven great sects!"

That was such an obvious indication.

'All you need is to give me a word, and I will take revenge for you! I will help you kill them all!'

'Your business is as important as mine to me!'

Other than that, she called Ye Xiao Little Brother Ye again. Apparently, she was making the promise a personal issue. If she continued calling him Young Brother Ye, she made the commitment as a representative of Misty Cloud Palace. Now she was promising this to him with her own words. That meant the promise was pretty valuable!

Unfortunately, it seemed Ye Xiao didn't quite get it even though Xuan Bing couldn't be more frank about it. He smiled and said, "Thank you so much. If I need any help in the future, I will seek for you, Miss Xuan."

Han Bingxue frowned.

Even he could tell the perfunctoriness in Ye Xiao's response.

Han Bingxue surely knew how much Xuan Bing was offering to Ye Xiao, but he also understood Ye Xiao was too proud to ask for help to take revenge for himself, even if he couldn't do it himself!

A man died; the bird pointed at the sky. [1] Death wasn't such a big deal for him.

Xuan Bing humphed and said, "I will wait for you! My promise is permanent!"

"I appreciate your kindness, Miss Xuan. When I need it, I will go." Ye Xiao blandly smiled. "I have given away many good things. Maybe sometime later, I should remember to take a payback."

Xuan Bing was shocked when she heard 'remember to take a payback'. She knew Ye Xiao might remember it, but also ignore it!

As she remembered, Ye Xiao never yielded. When somebody helped him forwardly, and he couldn't turn down the favor, he would accept it. However, if somebody took the favor as a deal, he would never accept it.

What he actually meant was, 'I gave you the lotuses because I was happy to! I never asked for your help! If I wanted to exchange my lotuses for your help, even after negotiation, you would never get as many as those I have given you.'

'I can't care less about your payback. I never wanted it when I gave the lotuses to you. What I gave you represents my true heart. I feel my clear conscience. It was never a deal to me.'

'Do not insult me by making it a deal.'

'Since you are paying me back with a promise like that, I guess we don't need to continue our friendship anymore!'

'A business deal in the friendship destroys the friendship. What do I need an impure friendship for? Why shouldn't I just let go of it?'

'I will never go to ask for your help!'

Xuan Bing sighed. She lowered her head and said, "Right. I said something awful. It should be my gratitude to return the favor, yet what I said was so stupid that it made this sound like a business. It insulted your kindness, Little Brother Ye. I apologize."

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[Really? Xuan Bing apologizes for this?]

Everybody had their own thought according to their position. For Ye Xiao, Xuan Bing should rage up in the flames of fury and scold him for not being grateful.

[What is going on?]

Ye Xiao felt a bit embarrassed.

Ye Xiao had noticed that the spiritual qi in this place was gradually losing activity. However, it was happening very slowly. If Ye Xiao didn't have East-rising Purple Qi, he might not notice it.

He was sure it must be relevant to what had happened to him! However, he didn't have any evidence yet...

...

That night.

Xuan Bing held a feast in the most luxurious hotel in the small town. In fact, the most luxurious hotel only had three small separate rooms.

When Xuan Bing got to the hotel, she slapped a note of a hundred taels of gold on the table. She demanded that the hotel turn down all the other guests.

The hotel keeper was overjoyed.

He had been working so hard for over half of his life and hadn't earned one hundred taels of gold in total. With the money he made this day, he never needed to worry about his life anymore. He

could even close the hotel the next day, so he accepted Xuan Bing's request.

What happened next was people who worked in the hotel worked their lives out to prepare for the feast.

Ye Xiao was touched, so he ordered a few dishes too.

The dishes he ordered touched Xuan Bing's soft heart. Those were her favorite food when she was in the Land of Han-Yang. When she saw the dishes, she would smile happily.

When they were eating, Xuan Bing deliberately ignored those dishes. However, she would taste them a little bit occasionally. When the food she used to love in the past entered her mouth, she felt the relish was lingering on her soft heart.

...

—————

[1] Sometimes 'bird'(鳥) means penis.

Chapter 1063: Xuan Bing's Heart

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue didn't have scruples at all. They just kept eating, drinking, and talking.

However, Xuan Bing was sensitive enough to notice that whenever Ye Xiao looked at those dishes, he would look gentler and softer.

It made her feel sour in the heart.

She repeatedly asked herself many times, [Xuan Bing, is it really that difficult for you to give up the identity and position you have now?]

[Do you really think you are significant and important?]

[You pretended to be unacquainted to Master when you faced him. You pretended to be in a higher position than him. What the hell are you doing? Do you really know what you are doing?]

She had criticized herself lots of times. However, she never picked up the courage to admit who she was.

She didn't realize that her true heart was being dominated by Bing'er, the personality that had a weak sense of existence. Maybe Bing'er was never a weak personality. It was just in sync with the other personality. In other words, Bing'er was Xuan Bing, and Xuan Bing was Bing'er. It was always only one person. Bing'er's heart was precisely Xuan Bing's heart.

The long-lasting longing and unforgettable affection were dominating her heart day by day.

That night, Ye Xiao was planning to check how many other things he had gotten except the over one hundred acres of lotuses. However, when his spiritual mind just entered Boundless Space, he felt an overwhelming weariness and fell asleep immediately.

It was a night of silence.

Not really. It should be a night of Ye Xiao's snore.

It kept Han Bingxue awake the whole night. In fact, he was worried.

[There seems to be something wrong about Boss.]

[Although he is weak in cultivation, only in the high level of Dream Origin Stage, he shouldn't sleep so tight, should he?]

In fact, Ye Xiao was sleeping so tight like a dead pig. He had no reaction to anything around but only kept snoring. Han Bingxue made some weird sounds on purpose, but Ye Xiao had no response to them.

Han Bingxue spent a whole night lying with anxiety. When the sky only turned bright, he went to Ye Xiao's room and shook him for a long time until Ye Xiao woke up.

"Brother, is everything alright?" Han Bingxue was worried.

Ye Xiao just had a good sleep for the night. He felt energetic and spirited. He answered with confusion, "What could go wrong? I am fine. Perfect!"

Han Bingxue walked out of the room in confusion.

When it was time for breakfast, Xuan Bing didn't show up. They went to her door and knocked, but nobody responded. They pushed the door and entered the room but found it empty.

The bed was made. It didn't seem to be used the last night.

Apparently, she left after dinner the last night. She hadn't spent the night in the room.

"She's gone," Han Bingxue said.

"Gone?" Ye Xiao felt lost.

[Did she just leave in silence?]

"I talked to her last night. I thought she was going to rest in the room. It turns out she left at night," Han Bingxue said.

"Talked to her? About what?" Ye Xiao turned over, looked at Han Bingxue, and asked.

Han Bingxue felt embarrassed.

[What could we talk about? I recklessly leaked the secret of you, so I begged her to keep the secret.] However, he wouldn't admit failure, so he reluctantly said, "Nothing serious. Just about some love story kind of thing..."

Ye Xiao answered with an 'oh' in a meaningful tone. He said, "No wonder you have been at odds with each other all the way along. So I see. I never knew you are more capable than before. Did you get her too?"

He obviously misunderstood him. Han Bingxue surprisedly looked at Ye Xiao and dejectedly said, "You made a good guess, Boss..."

[I can't say no, can I... It's just... You indeed flattered me!]

[However, I have to take the dumb loss.]

Ye Xiao laughed and felt relieved.

He had suspected that Xuan Bing was Bing'er, but he didn't anymore. He thought that if Xuan Bing were Bing'er, she would never flirt with Han Bingxue.

Besides, he thought that what he suspected was impossible. For him, it was just a wishful thought. The two women had a vast difference...

Han Bingxue was wronged, but he couldn't say it.

When he begged Xuan Bing to keep the secret, Xuan Bing decisively rejected. In the end, he threatened her with a desperate fight, but Xuan Bing answered by threatening Ye Xiao's life, "I don't mind if you start the fight. I wonder who would get hurt first when you start it? Would it be me?"

Then Han Bingxue submitted.

It certainly couldn't be her; it would only be Ye Xiao. Han Bingxue was well aware of it. Apparently, it was useless to threaten her with violence. In fact, she could easily threaten him!

The violent threat didn't work. Han Bingxue had to keep begging her. In the end, Xuan Bing finally loosened her mouth. Han Bingxue signed an agreement with Xuan Bing, promised many conditions that benefited Xuan Bing... After all that he had done, she eventually promised to keep the secret for him mercifully.

Only Han Bingxue knew the pain, and he couldn't tell others about it.

[If Boss gets to know the truth, he will absolutely laugh at me. I will never be able to raise up my head in front of him. Besides, if he knows that I leaked his secret recklessly, he will show me no mercy. He will give me an extreme punishment.]

[I can't tell him the truth! I can't!]

Han Bingxue made up his mind.

[Xuan Bing won't have lots of chances to get in touch with Boss after all!]

[Maybe this is the only time they meet each other!]

[I can save my dignity!]

When Ye Xiao was leaving Xuan Bing's room, he glanced at a piece of paper on the table.

He walked over and picked up the paper.

He was shocked.

There were no words written on it, but only a striking roundish ink mark.

Nothing else.

It felt like... somebody grabbed the pen and soaked it with ink, but kept circling it over the paper, thought for a long time, and

couldn't decide what to write in the end. The ink dropped on the paper and made the circular mark.

There were no words, but Ye Xiao felt that when Xuan Bing took the paper, she wanted to say something.

She must have thought for a long time but failed to think of a word. She must be unquenchably ambivalent.

What was she ambivalent about?

Ye Xiao wanted to make a guess, but he had no idea what to guess at all.

...

Chapter 1064: Left and Return

Xuan Bing was gone, but the days went on, and people still needed to eat. Ye Xiao had a bite on the hot steamed bun, and he started to recheck his spiritual mind. Ye Xiao was sure he had seen the stele yesterday and the image of Wood Space. He didn't understand why he couldn't now.

However, when he just started to check on it, he was stricken by the irresistible sleepiness again. He tried to resist it, but his resistance only lasted for a short time. After that, he lied on the table and fell asleep. He didn't even swallow the steamed bun in his mouth.

"Holy hell! What is the matter?" Han Bingxue was shocked.

He hurriedly carried Ye Xiao to the room and checked on him again and again, but only to find him alright.

The problem was that no matter what he did to Ye Xiao—scream at him, shake him, slap him on the face—Ye Xiao didn't respond!

Han Bingxue had no idea what to do, so he just kept sighing.

He was totally worried and at a loss about what Ye Xiao was going through.

Ye Xiao was awfully weak in Xuan Bing and Han Bingxue's eyes, but he was at least level seven of Dream Origin Stage. In such a cultivation level, even if he stayed awake for half a year, he shouldn't be sleepy like that.

He had been like that for two continuous days.

Even if he were just sleeping, he wouldn't snore so loudly.

More terribly, when he was sleeping, he totally lost alert which all cultivators should have!

Han Bingxue believed any cultivator who could break Ye Xiao's automatic protective qi shield could easily kill Ye Xiao!

[Did Boss suffer any hidden attack in the fourth layer? Maybe it will stay invisible, but when something triggers it, he will strangely fall into asleep like this?]

He had been thinking for a long time, searching for everything he could remember, even including those unauthentic stories, legends, myths, tales... Eventually, he came up with only one possibility, which was mentioned above.

Hearing the thunder-like snore of Ye Xiao, Han Bingxue lied awake, thinking about what happened. He believed it wasn't a tricky situation, and it had to be solved as soon as possible. However, he had no idea who in the realm could explain it.

[Should I go to Ghost Doctor?]

[What should I offer him to convince him?]

[It is inconvenient to seek for that old monster's help indeed.]

Surprisingly, in the latter part of the night, he found the sound of Ye Xiao's snore was getting lower. Eventually, he became silent.

Han Bingxue took a breath of relief.

[Maybe... possibly... very likely... he has the self-cure capability? So he is getting better by himself?]

After a while, Ye Xiao started to snore again, and it sounded louder and louder...

Han Bingxue completely couldn't understand the situation, but he also couldn't make up his mind to take Ye Xiao to the doctor. He decided to let Ye Xiao sleep a little longer. He had slept the last day. Although he would sleep soon after waking up, there was a time he stayed sober. Han Bingxue decided to ask Ye Xiao's opinion when he was awake before making any decision.

He left Ye Xiao's room and stayed outside the door, watching everything around!

...

Ye Xiao was making sky-shaking snores as if nothing in reality meant anything to him.

As he snored louder and louder, the window was suddenly opened silently. A weightless black shadow flew into the room.

The person who entered the room had marvelous moving skills. No sound was made when the sleeves flicked the air. No dust rose when the feet touched the floor. Even Han Bingxue, who was guarding the door, didn't notice it.

After entering the room, the person waved one hand to set an energy barrier.

Once set, Han Bingxue could hear a much lower snore. Seven more barriers were placed to block the sound of Ye Xiao inside the room.

No sound got through the barrier.

In the end, Han Bingxue couldn't hear anything from inside the room.

Even if there was a war happening in the room, there would be no sound of it on the other side of the door.

The person finished setting up the barrier and flew to Ye Xiao and stood right in front of his bed.

The person stared at Ye Xiao's face with a pair of emotional eyes. Nobody moved. A light scent started to flow in the air.

It was the natural scent of a woman's body.

The person was exactly Xuan Bing, who Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue believed was gone.

Xuan Bing left Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue because she genuinely had made up her mind to go. However, after moving several hundred miles away, she felt terrible to part with Ye Xiao, so she returned secretly.

She had left a piece of blank paper, on which she wanted to write

the words she wanted to say...

[I didn't write anything to him.]

That was the reason Xuan Bing used to convince herself to come back.

At the moment, Xuan Bing watched Ye Xiao snore. He didn't know she was here. She frowned and had the same thought as Han Bingxue.

She sighed and walked to the side of the bed. She sat on the bed, held Ye Xiao's left hand, and put her pretty fingers on his wrist to check his pulse.

"He seems fine... But... What is this?" She frowned and worriedly murmured, "I should try again..."

She had used about eight methods, but in the end, she decided to check his body with her spiritual mind, and finally, she found something wrong.

"His soul power is too weak, and he has been to a stage that is higher than his capability. He can't handle it, so he suffers from narcolepsy... But his spiritual soul is unharmed. There is no sign of soul impact on him. What would cause such a weird thing to happen to him?"

She was naturally much more experienced than Han Bingxue. However, she was also confused and blank facing Ye Xiao's weird situation.

Xuan Bing or Han Bingxue, neither of them knew that Ye Xiao's spiritual soul had been affected by an incredibly powerful force. His soul was continually being shocked, spread out, gathered together, and reformed... His soul was going through the same process again and again!

...

Chapter 1065: Is This a Dream?

The process of destruction and reconstruction was happening so fast that neither Xuan Bing nor Han Bingxue could notice it. They couldn't tell the difference from an unharmed soul!

Besides, when the overwhelming energy which was running inside him was consumed, his soul would be stable again, and he would wake up. It was just like what happened to him the day before. The nature of this event was that Ye Xiao forcibly tried to touch the unstable energy in his spiritual mind. His overconfidence led him to the reverse impact of that overwhelming energy. His soul was unstable, and that was why he was so sleepy all the time.

However, unlike what Han Bingxue and Xuan Bing thought about him, Ye Xiao had the sensation to the reality. In the dim light, he felt somebody sitting on his side.

The figure of that person brought him endless safety and softness.

He was still in the strange situation, but he unconsciously murmured, "Bing'er?"

Xuan Bing checked that Ye Xiao was fine three times, and then stared at him obsessively. When she was leaving, she heard what he called her.

She was shaking. Who could stop the heart's throb when it was aroused?

Ye Xiao was asleep. He took a turn on the bed, and one of his arms wrapped her waist.

Xuan Bing was stunned. She slightly tried to get rid of it.

Because of what she did, Ye Xiao was moved like he was approved to do so. He was also free from the restraint of the strange effect. He involuntarily stood up and hugged her tightly. "Bing'er, don't

go!"

Xuan Bing was terrified. She hurriedly operated Ling Xiao Ice Art, made one of the most influential martial art of Misty Cloud Palace, Shadow of Dream, and pressed on Ye Xiao's forehead with a finger.

[It is what it becomes. I guess I should let him believe he is still in a dream.]

Ye Xiao suddenly sat up and then slowly opened his eyes. He found Bing'er wearing white clothes, sitting on his bed, being covered by a light wave of fog. She seemed real but also not.

It seemed she would disappear with the fog and never to be found again.

"I am dreaming. Don't wake up. Don't. I don't want this to end. Bing'er, don't go..." Ye Xiao murmured, "Bing'er, where have you been?"

It showed the most profound feeling in his heart. Even though it was a dream, he had to speak his innermost thought, but he was still afraid that he would stop dreaming and lose the chance to be with Bing'er!

Xuan Bing didn't answer him. She just looked at him quietly, with deep affection in her eyes. However, her body was floating up like a fairy that was ready to leave his dream.

If she left, Ye Xiao would fall asleep again and take what just happened like a dream. Once he woke up the next day, he wouldn't suspect anything.

Ye Xiao suddenly stood up and held her tight in his arms. He shouted angrily, "Even in a dream, I still won't let you go!"

That angry shout seemed overwhelming. He was awake but more like dreaming. He didn't want to let go because he didn't know when he could see Bing'er again!

He knew that the dream would end, but he just didn't want to give up!

Xuan Bing was held into his arms all of a sudden. She felt weak in the legs. When she was going to push him away, Ye Xiao's face was getting closer and closer to hers. The next moment, Ye Xiao's mouth had arbitrarily kissed on her mouth...

Xuan Bing's eyes were filled with bashfulness and surprise. When she was about to push him away, she felt his two hands getting inside her clothes, touching every inch of her skin.

"Now you are back, though in a dream, I won't let you go again! You are my woman!"

Ye Xiao declared ownership.

Xuan Bing slightly groaned. She felt faint and powerless while staying in his arms. Her eyes looked misty, and she just stayed in Ye Xiao's arms as if she had lost her bones.

The only feeling she had was his lips moving to her mouth. She was more and more powerless being kissed. She just closed her eyes and felt her clothes being taken off one by one. After that, she felt her naked body was held and put on the bed. Ye Xiao's bright eyes were getting down closer to her...

Xuan Bing had never thought that it would lead to such a severe consequence to play Shadow of Dream on Ye Xiao when he was half awake. She had no idea Ye Xiao would actually be so audacious when he realized it was a dream!

"What a sweet foe..." Xuan Bing slowly closed her eyes and felt the strong body getting down on her...

She got to taste it again. Did she hate it, or... long for it?

It was a night of the storm.

...

The next morning.

Ye Xiao woke up and felt dazed. Suddenly he shouted, "Bing'er!"

He turned around and couldn't find the lady.

The bed was clean and neat. There was a unique scent in the air, but he couldn't tell what it was.

A night of transient joy left no trace!

"Was it just a wet dream? How come it felt so real!" Ye Xiao frowned.

He remembered that he was doing pretty well while doing it in the dream. Because he was quite sure it was a dream, so he did it robustly...

He even did some postures that he usually only dared to imagine...

He still remembered that white-skinned perfect body being moved back and forth under him, making different postures that he couldn't describe with words, which seemed to be shameful...

That night, he only felt how he rode and galloped in a disengaged behavior, playing whatever he wanted, enjoying whatever he could.

When he last erupted, he felt an extreme pleasure like an entire planet exploding in his head that even god would go crazy for it.

"This dream... is too real..." Ye Xiao sat up and frowned, "They say wet dreams won't be remembered. Why do I remember every detail of it... It should be just a dream last night..."

He was still enjoying the pleasure. He moistened his lips with the tongue and showed a wicked smile. "When can I see Bing'er again? If I get to do what I did in the dream last night on her, there will be no regrets in my life..."

He sat up and prepared to get dressed. When he moved, he felt the muscle aches on his waist.

"Holy hell. I should really not have too many sexual dreams... It

hurts." Ye Xiao nodded and said, "One wet dream and I became like this. If it happens in reality, I have no idea how much it will hurt me. Sex kills. How true!"

...

Chapter 1066: I Will Come Back!

Ye Xiao hurriedly operated his martial art to cure the pain. Unexpectedly, as he performed the martial art, he found the spiritual power in his Jing and Mai was rising up like a flood tide, rushing ahead inside of him as if it would destroy everything in its way.

It was crazily powerful. He had never felt like this before!

"Holy hell!" Ye Xiao was shocked. He stopped and said, "What the hell is going on? My cultivation... It seems to have become extremely strong and solid within one night... What happened?"

[It is unbelievable.]

"I haven't done anything..." He was a bit confused. "How does this happen? I have improved greatly without doing anything! Isn't it weird!"

If Xuan Bing heard what he just said, she probably would punch him hard and shout at him, 'You didn't do anything? You did too much already...'

"Is it because the stele has been melted?"

Ye Xiao tried to run the spiritual qi, then he felt the spiritual qi thrusting up as if it could rush up twelve floors. He felt the qi was running through him. After only the time of a breath, it had run dozens of circulation!

"Level nine of Dream Origin Stage!" Ye Xiao's eyeballs nearly popped out.

What he did was to only sleep twice, and he was boosted to level nine from level seven.

[Is this even possible?]

[Besides, the cold element of the ice and fire energies has been reaching the top level.]

[I have indeed used the cold qi from Cosmic Hades many times, but I always operated the power of fire at the same time. I offset the power of ice with the power of fire and build the power of ice with the power of fire. The two elemental energies always improve at the same time. Why is the cold element so advanced now?]

Ye Xiao could feel that he could break through the limit of Dream Origin Stage to reach Dao Origin Stage right away if he used East-rising Purple Qi to digest the Yin Yang Energy Sources inside him!

"Miracle!" he exclaimed.

He was such an experienced cultivator, but he couldn't think of an explanation for what happened to him.

It was such an unbelievable, incredible, and incomprehensible matter!

...

About a thousand miles away.

A rolling mass of black fog descended from the sky. Xuan Bing showed up in a dense forest of a mountain.

Her pretty face was full of painful pink patches. She kept rubbing her waist and while glancing at her own chest. She murmured, "What a prick. How could he be so robust? He wasn't even like a human! He was more like an animal! Pah! Worse than an animal... He nearly made me unable to walk..."

She had been feeling stiff and sore since she struggled to leave Ye Xiao's room.

She couldn't feel the floor when she was walking.

None of the tough fights she had ever taken part in had ever made her body exhausted like this. Considering such, Ye Xiao was cruder than animals!

However, when she thought of what happened in the night, she only flushed.

"Master has learned evil things..."

She remembered those special postures that she was forced to make. She didn't have any power to resist at all under Ye Xiao's powerful strikes. She could only let him do whatever he liked.

She felt like passing out because of her bashfulness when she thought about what was happening during the night.

She had always been staying in a higher position than others, so she would never think of such a day coming!

To be played in such a way by a man... she didn't feel like resisting.

She even... longed for it, asked for it!

The worst part of it was that what happened was all because of her! She did it herself!

How could it happen if she didn't return to Ye Xiao?

If she didn't use Ling Xiao Ice Art to hit Ye Xiao with Shadow of Dreams, how could Ye Xiao be so wild in the bed? How could he let it out crazily on her?

She did what she had done, so she had to take what happened to her. No matter what happened to her, she had to bury it in the heart... In fact, only herself knew whether it was pleasant or painful.

At the end of the night, she nearly passed out. She forcibly stood up and cleared all traces of her. She made the bed and sat back on the bed.

When Ye Xiao was about to wake up, she hurriedly fled away...

As she was resting a thousand miles away from Ye Xiao, she still clearly felt the particular itch and ache on her body. She felt like floating, like she was weightless in the air...

"What a sweet foe... What am I to you..." Xuan Bing gritted her teeth. She thought of the postures that all women would feel

ashamed of and blushed. She didn't know whether to feel angry or not.

As she was thinking, her eyes looked misty. She was lost in it.

It seemed the personality of Bing'er in her head was rising again. It took charge of her mind. [I am master's concubine... He can do whatever he wants to me... I am happy with whatever he did to me...]

"God damn it!" Xuan Bing hurriedly operated Ling Xiao Ice Art to suppress down that thought. She shouted to the sky.

Her shout was rolling up to the cloud like phoenix hovering in the stormy sky!

"Ah?" Xuan Bing was a powerful cultivator. She realized something wrong.

"My cultivation... improved! Why?" She checked on her own spiritual power and figured out what was different. She was shocked.

What happened in the night wasn't a real battle, but it consumed a lot and placed a pretty heavy burden on her body. However, now she felt her power was enhanced. It didn't get boosted to a new level, but it was much more powerful than before!

Xuan Bing had reached the top of Qing-Yun Realm. She had no matches in Qing-Yun Realm except Wu Fa, who was known as the strongest cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm. When she returned from the Land of Han-Yang after all her adverse effects were removed, she was even more powerful than ever. She might be as powerful as Wu Fa, even better than him.

It was more difficult than going up to the heavens for people in their cultivation levels to improve. In fact, it might be easier to go up to heavens than to improve. They had to consider lots of aspects if they wanted to make improvements, including mindset, opportunity, luck, and others!

However, why did she actually improved so much after a night of unrestrainedness?

It was even a huge step up for her. She was now even confident that she could at least have an even fight against Wu Fa!

[How did that happen? Why am I improved after a night of pleasure?]

[I didn't do anything except doing that thing again and again with that prick!]

[Could it be that thing...]

Xuan Bing's face was getting redder, and it made her look exquisite and gorgeous.

After a while, she stood up again. The dark cloud was rolling in the sky and then howling away.

"I will come back soon!"

...

Chapter 1067: Ye Xiao's Ambivalence

Ye Xiao walked out the door and saw Han Bingxue who was pacing around in front of his room. "Boss, you are awake again? Are you okay? Do you feel sleepy?"

Ye Xiao touched his own head and spoke in confusion, "Why? Why would I feel sleepy? What are you talking about?"

"Really? Are you fine? You are not sleepy?" Han Bingxue widely opened his eyes.

"Are you ill... I had a good sleep with a sweet dream. It doesn't mean I want to sleep all the time!" Ye Xiao blushed and growled, "I just had a wet dream, and that's all. Do you really have to fuss?"

"Wet dream!" Han Bingxue's eyeballs nearly popped out. "What did you say? You had a wet dream? I have been staying outside the door all night! Why didn't I hear anything? It doesn't make sense!"

Ye Xiao was ashamed, "Are you done? I am going to get your handsome little face f*cked!"

What Han Bingxue said proved that it was just a dream. If there were another person in the room, it certainly would make some big noise, and Han Bingxue should have known it. It destroyed the small hope that Ye Xiao had in the heart. He felt ashamed at the same time, so he started to talk nonsense.

"Stop! Stop it, please! I am not that type... Look at you, after rebirth, you suddenly started to like that special thing really... This is..." Han Bingxue raised both his hands to submit. He kept staring at Ye Xiao as if he had found new land in the world, with his eyes widely opened.

Ye Xiao knew that he had said something stupid, so he didn't blame Han Bingxue. However, he felt annoyed being stared by Han Bingxue in that way. He coldly said, "Are you done looking at me? Keep staring, and I will rip your clothes off. Let's show yourself to

everybody!"

"No, please. Boss, it's a mistake. I am not looking at your face in any special way... I am..." It seemed he was trying to confirm something. Suddenly, he jumped up ten meters high and shouted with his eyeballs popped out, "Holy hell! Boss, did you break through two levels within one night? Did you take aphrodisiac or what?"

Ye Xiao knew that he wronged Han Bingxue, but he was angry about what the latter said. Ye Xiao pretended to smile and said, "What? Can't I?"

Han Bingxue shook like he wanted to wake up from a dream, "Holy heaven... You did take an aphrodisiac... Am I dreaming... As fast as that, you are going to catch up with me pretty soon, aren't you..."

"Pah! I said I did break through two levels last night! I didn't take any f*cking aphrodisiac! Do you really think I need that thing? Look at you, isn't it a piece of cake to catch up with you?" Ye Xiao twisted the lips.

[Finally, it is not about the way dream... How embarrassing...]

[I thought he had heard something last night. I did make quite a big noise last night. How come he didn't hear a thing? I felt sore on the waist for real...]

Sometimes, people like to cheapen themselves. He didn't want others to know his privacy, yet when he confirmed others didn't know it, he would be surprised that nobody knew how great he was. Young Lord Ye must be the glaring one of this kind!

After breakfast, under Han Bingxue's watch, Ye Xiao didn't sleep.

"Boss, are we going today?" Han Bingxue asked.

"I need to think about it." Ye Xiao smiled bitterly.

"Boss, I know what you are thinking. I know it is hard to accept

what is happening." Han Bingxue seriously said, "But it is not a difficult problem to solve."

"Oh? How to solve it?" Ye Xiao asked.

"In my opinion, we have to admit that you are occupying the body of the man's son." Han Bingxue said, "Even though you are a different soul, you are still the same body. Your blood is still his blood. You are his son! You can't deny it."

"In other words, Uncle Ye, whom I haven't met yet, is your father. Ye Clan is your clan.

"You are bonded in blood. No matter how great you will be, in what position you will be, you can't erase the bond!

"Other than that, even for your own future in the martial world, you have to acknowledge him. If you don't, you are an ungrateful son. The guilt in your heart will make a reverse impact on you. You can't survive it. If cultivators can't face their true heart with no guilt, they can never make great progress."

"You have to pay the debt to your father." He gave a conclusion, "So, Boss, just face it."

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly and blandly said, "Of course I know that. I know every word you said. What is troubling me is something else. In fact, my problem was never what you said."

He paused and then said, with a sense of bitterness in his eyes, "We are brothers. You know Xiao Monarch is an orphan who was abandoned when he was just a baby. He had no family. He had no name..."

"I did feel the grudge in my heart. I thought it was unfair. However... Bingxue, what do I do if I meet my real parents one day? Who are my real parents? This or that? How do I choose?"

"Well..." Han Bingxue was shocked.

He honestly didn't think of it.

"Two couples are all my parents?" Ye Xiao worriedly said, "I don't think they can accept it, can they? Am I this couple's son, or the other's? How ridiculous..."

Ye Xiao sighed. He didn't know what else to say.

Han Bingxue widely opened his eyes. He was wordless too.

He had no idea what to say about such a complicated and strange situation.

"Maybe... your parents in your previous life... have passed away long ago..." After a long silence, Han Bingxue squeezed such words out of his head.

Ye Xiao speechlessly looked at Han Bingxue.

"Boss, think about it. You were an orphan in your previous life. You cultivated alone on the way to the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage! How many years did it take you?" Han Bingxue actually felt confident about it, "It was such a long time! Your parents were definitely not some influential figures. If they were, why would they abandon their own son? They had never tried to find you afterward! Since they were not some powerful figures... I guess they must have died a long time ago. Don't you think?"

He felt that his theory was more and more reasonable. In the end, he concluded, "So, you don't need to worry about it."

Ye Xiao wanted to rage up when he heard Han Bingxue saying his parents were dead but ended up just making a long sigh. He said, "I know what you mean. I agree with what you said. But... When I think about them, I have that kind of feeling... I don't know why... It is always quite clear."

"I feel... that they are not dead!" Ye Xiao's eyes were full of complexity. He said, "It is such a strong idea. I can't erase it. I can't shake it. I don't know why I have such steadfast thought."

...

Chapter 1068: Space Changed

"At least they are not here." Han Bingxue said, "You can't hurt that side for this side, but nor can you hurt this side for that side!"

"I say, why don't you just lie to both sides? Just push things ahead step by step. Deal with the problem before your eyes first! When your old parents meet your current parents, that's the time when you have to face the problem!"

As he kept saying it, he felt that it was such a brilliant idea, so he started to celebrate, "I am such a genius! I actually came up with such a brilliant idea. I would envy myself for the talent and wisdom I have..."

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes up and weakly sighed. "I guess this is the only way. One step at a time, deal with the current situation first."

Then both of them were silent.

Ye Xiao took a deep breath and tried not to think about the problem. He ran his spiritual mind and decided to reach Boundless Space again.

In the two days, when he tried it, he fell deep asleep. He had to be more cautious this time.

He split only a slight piece of weak spiritual mind out to do it.

He thought that even if something made an impact on his soul, he wouldn't just fall asleep again!

In fact, unexpectedly...

He actually entered it pretty easily!

The first thing he saw was Erhuo. It was jumping up and down. It had collected many ripe fruits and piled them up like a small mountain. It was a fruit mountain indeed.

The most intuitive view about the space was the mizzle. The purple mizzle almost covered everything else in the space.

In one month, Erhuo had walked every corner of the fourth layer. It collected all the medicinal plants that could never grow any better. What it had collected had honestly piled up like a mountain.

Erhuo abstracted all the energy from the fruits and converted it into original purple qi. A small part of the purple qi was used on Erhuo itself, while the rest was used on making dan beads. Erhuo didn't become self-conscious. It just couldn't absorb too much energy from the fruits because there were too many fruits. It was a marvelous spiritual beast indeed, but it was also limited in carrying capacity. The fourth layer of the Mountain of All Medicines was a super medicinal plant center. The energy from it could quickly fill its stomach. That was why at the moment, lots of supreme dan beads were casually placed on the floor... There were roughly ten thousand dan beads...

Ye Xiao's eyeballs nearly popped out.

He never saw Erhuo working so hard since the day it came to the world.

He could also see that Erhuo's fur was all crystal like jade, even shining with a colorful glow among the floating purple qi!

Apparently, it had been greatly benefited during the process of dan making.

Otherwise, it would never work hard like that.

It was true. For Erhuo, it could digest the energy from the fruits and make more supreme dan beads. It was perfect for him to do some exercise after eating lots of spiritual fruits! It was a healthy lifestyle for it!

Other than that, the dozens of Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snakes were evolved.

The snakes looked shiny on every single scale. Over a hundred snake skins were lying around them.

There were only twenty-seven snakes...

That meant almost every snake had evolved four times under the push of the massive power!

The scales that were left after four evolutions were of different sizes. The snakes became twice bigger when they did the first evolution. The last two times, they became smaller.

The snakes were now only as thick as a human arm and as long as three meters.

It wasn't a small scale, but they were much smaller than they used to be.

The golden caruncles became dazzlingly bright, glowing like colorful gems.

After observation, Ye Xiao found that the snakes were all much more powerful than the king of Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snake in the old days.

Erhuo ran over to Ye Xiao when it saw Ye Xiao get in. It kept rubbing its whiskers and gloatingly meowed.

What it meant was, 'Am I not awesome, huh? I made a lot of dan beads...'

"Gloat your ass!" Ye Xiao slapped Erhuo and made it roll around. "It is a mess here. You didn't sort them out. Didn't I give you tens of thousand jade bottles? Didn't you say you would keep them in different types? What is this? Why just casually put them on the floor? Are you waiting for me to do it? What a sh*tty job you have done?"

Erhuo shouted angrily and pointed here and there. Apparently, it was scolding Ye Xiao for not showing understanding and sympathy for its hard work. It blamed Ye Xiao for being picky and cold-hearted.

Ye Xiao humphed, "Enough noise. I will give you three days. Just

get the dan beads sorted into different bottles. Put the labels on the bottles. Otherwise, I will cut you off the connection to Wood Space and Sky Space. Wait and see!"

Erhuo lowered its head. It looked upset and gloomy. It looked at Ye Xiao in a piteous way. That adorable look of it could easily kill all young women.

Ye Xiao was not a young woman though. He wasn't in a good mood, so he just ignored the cat's performance!

Erhuo realized it wouldn't work, so it had to continue working even harder.

"Little loser, wait and see how I commandeer you." Ye Xiao watched Erhuo lowering its head, walking away with its tail pointing to the floor. He gloatingly smiled. The smile of him was full of wickedness.

When he turned around, he looked even happier with self-importance like he had conquered everything with his evil face.

[I am rich... Hahahaha...] He was delighted, [So many supreme dan beads... How much can I earn from it...]

Far from him, all those snakes were watching him in a careful look. They feared for him.

In fact, with their own capability, Ye Xiao could never hurt them. If a few of them attacked together, Ye Xiao would be quickly taken down. However, under Erhuo's suppression, especially after watching Ye Xiao commanding Erhuo, the snakes thought that he must be much more horrible than the cat, even though they could see how wicked and mean he was. That was why they all behaved better than a sweet baby.

Ye Xiao casually picked up two dan beads which could improve his cultivation. He threw them into his mouth, and then walked into Wood Space.

When he just entered Wood Space and took a glance at it, he was

shocked.

[Is this... still Wood Space?]

...

Chapter 1069: I Have Plenty More

He took a broad view and what he could see was exactly... the fourth layer of Mountain of All Medicines!

It was precisely the same.

Where was Wood Space?

He couldn't lose Wood Space!

The fourth layer of the Mountain of All Medicines was much broader than Wood Space. However, there were a lot of beautiful treasures in Wood Space, such as the Tree of Cultivating Tea, the Regeneration Lotus, and especially the lotuses that have yet to mature. He had worked really hard to collect all the lotuses in the fourth layer and put them into Wood Space. He never knew that eventually, the fourth layer actually entirely moved into Boundless Space.

[What the hell?]

[Really? Making fun of me?]

[Hmm. It's okay to be fooled, but I can't lose that tree and the lotuses. If I lose them, the gains will never make up for my losses!]

After searching for a long time, he finally found Wood Space in a corner.

Compared to the fourth layer of the Mountain of All Medicines, Wood Space was too tiny.

As it appeared, Wood Space was wholly assimilated by the fourth layer...

"Is this even possible..." Ye Xiao couldn't help praising.

[The unique Wood Space has actually been assimilated by other space! More unbelievably, the other eight spaces didn't get assimilated.]

[Doesn't it mean there was some kind of power strong enough to divide Wood Space from the Nine Spaces?]

[Holy hell! What kind of power is that?]

[Such mighty power has no influence on other spaces!]

[How accurate!]

[It is a simple truth now. The Mountain of All Medicines has replaced Wood Space. Now, it became the new, broader, Neo-Wood Space... Can I say that?]

[The new Wood Space has all the specialties of the old Wood Space.]

Ye Xiao rubbed his head and accepted the truth. After that, he found something different again. When he opened Wood Space, the energetic purple qi which used to belong to the Mountain of All Medicines flowed out to the entire Boundless Space.

Those normal purple qi which was in liquid form rushed into Wood Space like a flood.

The two streams of qi, which had the same nature but in different forms, crashed into each other and made a storm with thunders and bolts of lightning in it. The flashes of lightning appeared like silver snakes dancing in the air. It lasted for quite a long time.

Ye Xiao obviously felt that the two streams of purple qi had been counteracting and harmonizing with each other. The new spiritual qi that was created by the crash was actually much more powerful than before in both purity and density.

[The secret must be in the Mountain of All Medicines.] Ye Xiao thought.

[However, it takes time to look for it. I need to be patient and approach it gradually.]

As his mindset changed, the entire new Wood Space, the fourth

layer of the Mountain of All Medicines, gradually changed too.

All the medicinal plants turned into many pieces of land, distinct from each other. After everything was done, Ye Xiao left. He could feel that he had reached the top of level nine.

All he needed was an opportunity to break through the limit of Dream Origin Stage and reach Dao Origin Stage.

Han Bingxue looked bored while sitting beside Ye Xiao.

He didn't know Ye Xiao would get into meditation so abruptly without even telling him.

However, it was better than sleeping after all. If Ye Xiao fell asleep again, Han Bingxue would have to take him to the doctor!

Ye Xiao woke up from meditation. Han Bingxue started to complain, "Come on, Boss... You can't do that to me... Uh?"

Before he finished, he saw several jade bottles in front of him.

"What are these?" Han Bingxue asked.

He seemed to be stupid when he was hanging around with Ye Xiao, but in fact, he was still a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator who had brilliant capabilities in power, views, and experience. He just glanced at the bottles, and he knew that whatever was inside the bottles must be something extraordinary!

"Supreme dan beads." Ye Xiao answered indifferently, "Heaven Climbing Dan. Take one, and it adds one hundred years of cultivation on you. You can take several of it. The efficacy won't be reduced."

Han Bingxue's eyeballs nearly popped out. He exclaimed, "Ah?"

"There are one hundred in these bottles." Ye Xiao blandly said, "When you fully digest them, you should be on top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage. Sure, I wish you can reach higher levels..."

Han Bingxue was wordless.

[It is... Where does he get them?]

After a long time, Han Bingxue, who was showing a wry face, murmuringly asked, "Heaven Climbing Dan? In supreme level? I can take several of it at a time, and the efficacy won't be deducted? ... Please, don't act pretentious. Of course, the efficacy won't be deducted. It's supreme level Heaven Climbing Dan! Can't you stop talking casually like that? I am terrified. I am frightened. I am shocked. Don't you get it!"

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "I don't want to speak casually like that. Things happened. I guess I should just act cool about it. It is good for both you and me!"

He was pretending though. He honestly didn't want to act like that.

He had too many dan beads like those in his Boundless Space. He had thousands of it!

More would be produced every day afterward.

If anybody wanted him to act surprised and say 'What a marvelous thing; what a precious thing; what a rare thing...'

It would be too disagreeable for him, no matter how shameless he was.

For him, those were trivial things.

He honestly couldn't say anything to praise them highly.

"One for one hundred years of cultivation... Efficacy won't be reduced..." Han Bingxue took over one bottle, kept twisting his lips, "One hundred dan beads means... ten thousand years of cultivation..."

"Not precisely though. Even in supreme level, those dan beads will have less effect on you after you take more of it. It just reduce much less than other kinds of dan." Ye Xiao said, "However, it is good for you after all."

"Good for me..." Han Bingxue rolled up his eyes, "Brother, Boss... Please, don't play indifferent... This is much more than just good for me... This is a blessing from heavens!"

"Just take it." Ye Xiao casually waved his hand. "I have plenty more. One hundred dan beads. So what? Ten thousand years. So what? It's nothing."

He was never stingy to his own people, especially to his own brothers.

"Nothing? You have plenty more? Are you lying? How could you possibly have plenty more?" Han Bingxue looked at Ye Xiao with doubts.

Ye Xiao turned one hand and showed him a pile of jade bottles. He raised one eyebrow and said, "I do have plenty more..."

...

Chapter 1070: One Stomp Shook the World

"Boss..." Han Bingxue's eyes were moist, "My admiration for you is like the flood in the river... non-stop... Senior Brother, please, accept my respect. You are my only boss in my life. I will never leave you..."

"Get away!" Ye Xiao scolded with laughter, "It's about time! Let's go. Town of Ye."

After they left the small town, Ye Xiao gradually accelerated.

That was his personality after the rebirth. When he was hesitating, he would slow down the pace to think. When he made a decision, he would never waste time!

No more hesitation!

No more pause and pondering!

Do it right away!

Face it right straight!

Han Bingxue was a bit surprised when Ye Xiao kept going faster and faster.

[Weren't you hesitating just now? Why are you so decisive and fast now...]

[Boss is indeed my boss.]

Apparently, he didn't know that Ye Xiao had many differences in personality from his previous life. He only took the move after he made up his mind. When he moved, he moved like a bolt of lightning. He learned to be cautious from Zuo Wuji. He wouldn't let himself be reckless. He would try to make sure everything was under consideration. When it was decided, he would do it in full power and full speed!

"Boss, your sleeping problem..." Han Bingxue was cautious.

"It's fine," Ye Xiao delightedly answered.

"Urh..." Han Bingxue rolled up his eyes and suddenly had no word to say.

Ye Xiao was fine. They were doing what they should do. What else to say?

On the road, they saw many horses running far away. When they paid attention to it, they realized the men on horses were all moving in the same direction.

"It seems they are heading to Town of Ye, where we are heading too. Is anything wrong in Ye Clan?" Han Bingxue said when he saw Ye Xiao stop to take a distant look.

"Even if anything is happening to Ye Clan, it won't make a lot of men go to the Town of Ye at the same time, will it? Ye Clan is after all just a local force. What do they have that would draw many people's attention?" Ye Xiao looked at the dust rolling up in the sky. He frowned. "Did something serious happen during the days I was missing?"

Han Bingxue laughed and said, "No more guessing. Let's stop someone and ask about it."

When they were talking, a series of horse steps were sounding like thunderclaps behind them. A team of riders was moving fast like lightning toward them.

The riders were all wearing black suits. There were at least one hundred men. They were howling over to them, with a long roll of dust behind them, like a wrathful dragon rushing toward them.

How extraordinary!

"This is too arrogant!" Han Bingxue smiled. "There are actually people, except you and me, who dare to act so arrogantly in Qing-Yun Realm! They must have an exaggerated opinion of themselves!"

Ye Xiao didn't know whether to laugh or to cry.

Han Bingxue obviously wanted to stop those men and ask about what was happening to Ye Clan. However, before he did, he put such a label on those people. Ye Xiao didn't know why he said so. Was he fooling himself? Maybe he was!

[Well... I, Ye Xiao, have never been so arrogant and domineering even in my previous life. How could those lads act like this? It is right to give them some lessons...]

Anybody should be careful not to be too arrogant. Otherwise, it will bring them troubles!

Those riders were getting closer to Ye Xiao.

Han Bingxue waited till it was time, then he pretentiously made a shout. His clothes were white like snow, his sword was white like snow, and his very being was just like snow. He took three steps ahead and stood in the middle of the road in lightning speed, right in those men's way.

- Clang! -

He stuck his sword on the ground and held the handle of the sword. He slightly raised up his head and squinted at those men! He wouldn't dodge or escape!

The image of him in others' eyes was like an ice mountain suddenly growing up fast to the clouds!

It was cold and indifferent, different to climb.

The green mountain turned white; the aura of terror long stayed!

Those men didn't seem to be ordinary. When they saw him, the one who was in front shouted angrily, "Who is it? How dare you stop Huang Clan's riders! Get the hell away!"

When he was shouting, the entire riding team didn't stop.

Apparently, they were pretty confident about their clan's power, so they didn't really care what Han Bingxue did!

That also meant those men were utterly ignorant!

Han Bingxue coldly smiled and shouted, "I exploited the mountains, and I planted the trees. I am in charge of this road, and I killed those who died on this road! Whoever wants to get past me must pay enough to please me!"

He was talking like a bandit.

Ye Xiao laughed so hard that he nearly passed out.

What Han Bingxue did had ruined the unfathomable and mysterious image of a grand master cultivator that he had just built for himself!

When he first showed himself, he was like the clear ice in the world, the terrifying horror in the universe, the extraordinary figure in the realm!

However, what he looked like now was difficult to describe because it was always difficult to describe a clown!

However, what he did next was never something a clown could do!

Absolutely not!

After saying those stupid words that very possibly had embarrassed himself, he raised up his right foot and stomped on the ground!

- Boom! -

As his foot hit the floor, within a thousand meters, the land was shaking! The earth was cracking!

After that, many wisps of dust were rolling up to the sky everywhere. - Crack! - The enormous hundreds of meters wide, hundreds of meters long, and dozens of meters deep pit appeared on the cracked ground!

It was big and deep, sunken in darkness, with clouds of dust rolling up.

One stomp and the world was in chaos!

Those men were no longer fierce and arrogant. All of them had fallen into that colossal pit!

Suddenly, their exclamation and cries burst in waves.

The first second, they were arrogant and overwhelming; the next moment, they all fell into a pit!

That was dramatic.

It was such a hole... of tragedy.

"Who is it?"

"What happened?"

"Who is it? How dare you set us up like this..."

A wave of exclamation sounded.

Han Bingxue coldly smiled and slightly flicked his sleeves. A blow of fierce qi swept over, carrying the ice cold energy like a hurricane. The dust which covered the sky was blown clean immediately!

There was only the frost and ice left on the floor!

"Get out!"

Han Bingxue humphed and his aura rose up.

In the one month before this, Xuan Bing had been staying with them. Han Bingxue didn't have a chance even to pretend to be cool. Now, it was finally his moment to show off. He surely had to use every second to act awesome...

...

Chapter 1071: Join Together to Attack

Did those men realize how enigmatic and overwhelming Han Bingxue was? Han Bingxue didn't care about that. He had the power which could destroy everything. Why did he need to care about the minor details?

All in all, at least Han Bingxue was enjoying the feeling of being in the highest position like a descending king!

He was unraveled in the universe! He was peerless in Qing-Yun Realm! He was unique in the world!

- Shoot, shoot... -

Dozens of figures jumped out of the pit. They set their feet on the floor again, with pale faces full of fear.

What had Han Bingxue done was casually stomp on the floor. Yet it shook the mountains and cracked the earth. It had overturned those men's recognition of a powerful man.

Although they didn't know what level Han Bingxue was in and how powerful he could be, they clearly understood that the cold-blooded man in white clothes was definitely someone they couldn't mess with. If he wanted to take their lives, it would be as easy as turning his hand over. That stomp was powerful enough to bury them all alive!

It was only a stomp!

How could that be any more difficult than turning over his hand?

"Honorable master, may I have your name?" A white-bearded old man who was standing in front spoke with his lips trembling, "I wonder what we Huang Clan have done that accidentally offended you? Please do point it out."

To stay low in front of the influential people and speak with flattering words, it was a surviving skill of the weak. The old man

leading the team of Huang Clan saw Han Bingxue, who looked handsome and wealthy, talk rudely and indecently, but had an incredibly strong capability, so he called Han Bingxue 'honorable master' to please him.

Apparently, Han Bingxue liked the attitude of that old man, though he was still keeping his hands behind the back. He arrogantly said, "Offended me? You think too highly of your clan! Do you really think you are qualified enough?"

The old man heard it and took a long breath of relief. He didn't feel humiliated. Instead, he felt glad. [We didn't offend you? Great!]

If such a super prominent figure indeed had enmity to his clan, the entire clan might be wiped out in one day. No luck could save them.

"Well... Honorable master is doing this for..." The old man didn't dare to be neglectful, so he asked humbly.

"First of all, I don't like the way you do things." Han Bingxue frowned and blandly gave them a lesson, "You were running wildly like that on the road. What if you hit somebody? Even if you won't hit anybody, it is still not a proper thing to hit any flowers or other plants!"

"That's right. Yes. Master, you are right. We were being stupid and careless." The old man kept his head low and acted humbly.

"Second, I am a robber. It is true that I take money from people who pass here. Hmm... However, you look pretty poor... I don't think there is anything valuable on you that I can take. I changed my mind."

He casually said, "I decided that you may leave after answering several of my questions if your answers satisfy me."

The men of Huang Clan all took a breath of relief.

[Just a few questions?]

[Good! That's easy! Anything is good except killing us.]

Huang Clan was literally one of the big clans in this area. They usually bullied around this place and did countless evil things.

However, when they had to face a powerful man, Han Bingxue, they didn't even say a damn word.

In Qing-Yun Realm, the bigger fist made the rule. It also applied even better to Oracle District!

"Do ask us anything you want, honorable master. We will tell you whatever we know and try our best to give you answers." The old man was humbler and humbler.

"Listen carefully. First, where are you going? Second, what for? Third..."

He listed over ten questions at a time.

The old man felt relieved.

[Great! He didn't ask anything difficult to answer. At least I alone can give all answers to his questions.]

"We are invited by Ye Clan to go to Town of Ye. There are two reasons we have to go. First, Ye Clan in Town of Ye must have some real good luck because they have gotten lots of Regeneration Ink Lotus. According to Li Clan, a part of Ye Clan's lotuses were taken from Li Clan's hands. Ye Clan was a bigger force so Li Clan couldn't say no to them. That was why all clans were invited to the Town of Ye. We are going to settle things down for both of them..."

The explanation of old man of Huang Clan told everything Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue needed to know.

It was quite simple. The Regeneration Ink Lotus that they brought back from the third layer of Mountain of All Medicines caused such a chaos.

Li Clan and Ye Clan left the mountain almost at the same time. In that night, as expected, Li Clan and Ye Clan had a brutal fight. Li

Clan was not Ye Clan's even match. After all, Ye Clan's forefather, Ye Tianchen, was in level two of Dao Origin Stage. He was invincible among the two clans. Li Clan suffered a significant loss. They failed to get the lotuses!

Li Clan people had to witness Ye Clan people going back to their house!

Things should be done at this point.

However, Li Clan couldn't tolerate the failure. Li Clan people were all afraid that Ye Clan would rise up high with the lotus's support. They didn't want Ye Clan to override them with the help of Misty Cloud Palace. Li Clan was always an enemy of Ye Clan. Li Clan people were afraid their clan might fall because of it!

In the days afterward, Li Clan people kept stirring troubles for Ye Clan and spread out the news about Ye Clan and the lotuses. Li Clan invited dozens of clans to come and set pressure on Ye Clan.

Ye Clan did acquire a lot, but they only got dozens of plants of Regeneration Ink Lotus. However, Li Clan made people believe Ye Clan had gained hundreds of lotuses.

The clans were all jealous.

It had been more and more challenging to collect Regeneration Ink Lotus in the recent few years. Misty Cloud Palace, who started all the lotus-hunting mission, had been driving all the clans crazy.

When the other clans heard the number 'hundreds', one of them said, "It is a hard time these days. Not to mention hundreds, even only dozens, over a dozen, is valuable enough for us to kill them all."

The clans decided to join together and force Ye Clan to give them the Regeneration Ink Lotus. Even if Ye Clan wouldn't give them all, but they wanted Ye Clan to give each clan the same amount. They didn't want any clan to be dominating...

It was the best solution to keep the balance. Li Clan people had

the same thought. [If Ye Clan becomes dominating, Misty Cloud Palace will support them entirely. We will be suppressed by Ye Clan till death takes us away. Ye Clan becomes the ruler, what do we do...]

They figured it was better to force Ye Clan to share the lotuses, and then keep every clan from getting more than others. Nobody could become dominating.

Ye Clan's opinion wasn't under their consideration. They just wouldn't let Ye Clan decide.

Ye Clan had to submit, no matter in a friendly way or in the other.

...

Chapter 1072: Nothing to Do with Me

Ye Clan certainly wouldn't like the plan of the other clans. [Are you kidding me? Even if we are forced to agree with you, we should at least have enough lotuses for you! We don't have hundreds of it!]

For one month, Ye Clan was in a mess.

There would be people dropping in to make trouble.

Ye Tianchen was the forefather of Ye Clan, who was also the strongest cultivator in the clan. He had been living in fights every day. However, even though he was level two of Dao Origin Stage, he fought alone, and he didn't dare to kill. He was afraid that if he killed any of those men, the other clans would fight back together and make it a war against Ye Clan. In the end, Ye Clan couldn't endure it anymore, so they decided to hold a meeting to discuss with the other clans.

"You all want Regeneration Ink Lotus? Fine! Let's hold a combat arena! Let our power decide!

"One victory, one lotus.

"We, Ye Clan, only have sixty lotuses! That's it! We can't take out more even if you kill us all.

"However, we can't be the only clan who provides the awards. Otherwise, we would rather fight till the end of our lives!

"You all have to offer your lotuses as awards! Each of you has to provide at least twenty lotuses!

"I, Ye Tianchen, give you the word today! If you don't agree, we will start a war! After today, I will not spare any life of yours! Whoever dares to infringe on Ye Clan's interests will die!"

After the thirteen fights, Ye Tianchen gritted his teeth and spoke with a mouthful of blood.

The leaders of the other clans realized they had pushed Ye Clan

to the edge. It turned out Ye Clan possibly just had only sixty plants of Regeneration Ink Lotus, which were of high quality.

They gave it a second thought and realized it was a fair deal. It might be the best solution to hold a combat arena.

They all had to give away a certain amount of lotuses, but much less than Ye Clan did, and much worse in quality than Ye Clan's lotuses. It was a benefit for them. Thus, they started to focus on making the arena rules. Only the younger generation below the age of twenty had the right to attend the arena. The award for one combat was one lotus.

The clans had agreed on a day to hold the arena.

That day happened to be the next day!

Huang Clan people were desperately running on the road for the arena.

"Things actually came down to such a situation..." Ye Xiao rubbed his jaw and murmured, "If I go up to fight the combat... I guess nobody can defeat me. Right?"

Han Bingxue rolled his eyes up.

[You go up?]

[Brother, your power has significantly improved since the rebirth, so does your duplicity. In the old days, Brother Ye never had such scheming mind and brazenness! What does the saying go? Your brazenness has made your face thicker than the thickest part of the city wall!]

[I have had enough... You can't bully people in such an inhuman way!]

[With your current capability, you can sweep the entire Oracle District!]

[Don't you understand?]

[Am I right?]

[You actually want to go fight against a bunch of kids...]

[Can you stop being so shameless, inhuman, evil, and vile?]

Since Han Bingxue knew what was happening, he decided not to go too far on this, so he generously announced, "Off you go now! Considering your humble behavior, I would like to give you a bit of advice. Do not rampage on the road like this ever. You are lucky that I have a good temper. If I were somebody else, you all would have died!"

The Huang Clan people humbly agreed and left.

All of them had the same thought in their minds. [You have a good temper, huh? You f*cking stomped, and it killed one hundred and eighteen horses of ours! We haven't done anything wrong...]

That was right. Their horses were all dead.

They had to run on foot to the Town of Ye now.

However, they never dared to say it out. They should thank god when they heard Han Bingxue told them to go...

They all ran like they were going to piss in their pants.

That was incredibly fast!

...

"We got what we need. Let's go." Ye Xiao was thrilled. "No matter what, I am a member of Ye Clan, am I not? I can't be absent in the arena."

Han Bingxue kept his eyes wide open and said, "Boss... Are you... really going to attend? Don't you think it would break the balance?"

Ye Xiao turned around and looked in surprise. "Why not? How do I break the balance? Am I not a young man younger than twenty? Am I not a member of Ye Clan? I meet all the conditions, then why can't I attend it?"

Han Bingxue looked freaked out. "Boss, I just found another strength of you. Why do you like to attend big events so much now... Isn't it a bit too evil... Ahem..."

...

In the Town of Ye.

The town was filled with all the people from different clans.

Five days later, the Misty Cloud Palace would send their deputy over.

According to that, the clans were having quite an urgent time. They had to finish redistributing lotuses within four days.

Ye Clan wasn't happy anymore, but full of sorrow.

In Ye Shuqing's backyard.

Ye Nantian was sitting at the table, holding a cup of tea, and drinking tea dilatorily.

He had commanded an army in Land of Han-Yang for many years. That gave him a great aura. His every movement in daily life was always showing his imposing manner.

Comparing to the anxious old gramp Ye Shuqing, he was totally the other extreme.

"Nantian, I am afraid we Ye Clan are going to be doomed." Gramp Ye sighed. He looked worried.

Ye Nantian sat still and talked casually, "So be it. Why are you so worried? Even the sky falls down, the taller ones will hold it for us. Look at you, I even think that maybe you are the chief of our clan."

Gramp Ye sighed, "I know you have the grudge in your chest. However, Ye Clan is our root. Ye Clan's survival, honor, and disgrace concern every one of us! You have to keep it in mind."

Ye Nantian showed a cold sneer, "Root? What kind of root? Do I really have to keep it in mind? Let me be honest with you. If you

and my mother were not here, I would have left for a long time... I don't care whether Ye Clan is in hell. It has nothing to do with me."

"Nantian, Ye Clan mistreated you, but you are after all named Ye. The blood in your body is Ye Clan's blood! You can't change it even when the sky falls to us!" Gramp Ye was angry, "You are impervious when our clan is facing a fatal crisis. How can you be so cold-blooded?"

Ye Nantian's eyes lit up drastic light, "How would my brother die if they have been treating everybody a real Ye Clan member? Is it really meaningful to devote ourselves? Does it worth unilateral devoting ourselves? If you still insist, I have no words to say!"

Gramp Ye was shocked. He suddenly froze.

...

Chapter 1073: It Was Me

- Crack! -

Ye Nantian crushed the teacup in his hand as he gritted his teeth. "You know there is something wrong about my brother's death, yet you never want to face reality, only because deep in your heart, you think we are all members of Ye Clan. I am not like you. To be honest with you, I have been investigating recently. It was definitely Ye Shuxin and his men who did it!

"I had evidence!

"The elders snatched the evidence from me just to cover the truth. They destroyed the evidence and denied everything! Does it sound like something your beloved families should do?

"Forefather obviously stands on their side. He has never allowed me to do anything about it!

"You were repelled from the seat of the Chief because of what I did according to them. But who doesn't know the real reason? Do you still insist that there is no plot and scheme in it?

"Why do you have to be so tolerant?

"Do you really endure all this only because you think the family name is more important than anything else?

"Do they treat us as their family?"

"I know who the murderer is, yet I can't touch him! I can't take revenge! I can only watch him!" Ye Nantian was in a fury. He spoke and gritted his teeth, but his voice sounded cold and calm. "Father, tell me! We have been suffering it, enduring it, tolerating it, for what?"

"For just a stupid name that we share with them?

"We have been giving away unilaterally for what?

"Should we put all our families' lives on risk?

"Is it worthwhile?"

"Is this clan still the Ye Clan which used to be our root? Our blood?"

"Does this clan still deserve our protection and lives?"

Ye Nantian's face looked calm, but there was raging anger hidden behind his expression.

Ye Shuqing made a long sigh. He had no words to reply. The flame of anger that had just risen in his heart was put off. What he could feel was only weakness. His heart had fallen into coldness and tiredness.

That was right. It was just like his son said. Did this clan still deserve his devotion?

He had risked his life to protect this clan, yet the ones who got the benefits were those who framed him, framed his son, and killed his other son!

He kept fooling himself. He could persuade himself. However, what it brought to him was the death of his people and the dim future of his group. In the end, nobody would praise or appreciate him. People would only tease him!

"Tell me the truth. A few days ago, Ye Shude went for collecting work, and he was found dead a hundred miles away from our old house. Was it you?" Ye Shuqing sighed.

Ye Nantian just sat still. A wicked smile showed up in his face. "Good guess, father. Not only Ye Shude, but also Ye Piaoliu and Ye Chengdong were all killed by me... Since you started this, let me be frank to you. Since I returned, six Dream Origin Stage members of our clan had accidents and died outside the wild. I did them all! Now I have clearly told you. Do you want to turn against me and tell them what I did?"

Ye Shuqing took in a cold breath.

"But the six of them all died in a look of..." Ye Shuqing was shocked.

"It appeared they were killed by spiritual beasts, right?" Ye Nantian coldly smiled. "It is absolutely a piece of cake for me to make a fake image of it."

"What happened back then?"

"When my brother was killed, those six men were the murderers!" Ye Nantian raised his sharp eyebrows. "Father, you know me. I don't have many strong points, but I have one pretty strong point. I always protect my family. I can risk my life for it! I was, I am, and I will be just the same!"

"Maybe you don't know yet. When your grandson made trouble in the Land of Han-Yang, I threatened the entire world to protect him! I would destroy the world for my son!"

"My brother is my beloved family! He was killed! I have to take revenge! I am not powerful enough now, but if I am, I will wipe out their group without hesitation!"

"I don't care if it is righteous or not! Don't tell me your family name theory. It may mean something to you, but for me..." Ye Nantian seemed determined, "I just don't buy it! I only know that nobody can mess with my family! Whoever bullies my family, whoever hurts my family, they will have to pay! Who killed my brother will get his entire family killed by my hand!"

"I don't care about righteousness! I don't care about positions. I don't care what it will bring to me!" He looked into the sky calmly, "This is me, Ye Nantian!"

"Even if I have to carry sins on my shoulders, I will take it, no matter how many sins I have to commit!" He strikingly said, "It is impossible that I can stay low and silent just for the sake of all!"

"Absolutely not!"

"I would rather die!"

Ye Shuqing looked stunned. He didn't know whether he should be happy or sad about it.

When he realized Ye Nantian had mostly taken revenge for his younger son, he felt the anger was vented. However, when he realized his older son was so determined about seeking revenge, he felt worried.

"It doesn't really matter much that the others are alive. However, Ye Shuxin and his family are alive. Humph," Ye Nantian murmured.

"Nantian, I understand and respect what you do for our family. But have you ever thought that... if the younger generation becomes useless in the future, what you do will make them a bunch of audacious and irredeemable fools!" Gramp Ye advised him in earnest, "There are many clans in which there are people like you who eventually raised a bunch of overbearing kids. Those kids eventually messed with someone they never should, and their clans were destroyed within one night!"

"Don't think I am not talking nonsense. I have lived dozens more years than you after all. I have heard and seen lots of cases that drew lessons to us."

Ye Nantian humphed and said, "What you said were some stupid people. My son has reached the top of cultivation limit in the Land of Han-Yang in his seventeen. He has ascended to Qing-Yun Realm on his own! Such power, talent, and effort, he is incomparable to the youngsters in Qing-Yun Realm!"

"You... You..." Gramp Ye was too angry to say anything.

Ye Nantian was obviously bias and sophistical. He was totally unreasonable. However, what he said about Ye Xiao was true. Gramp Ye honestly couldn't say anything to argue. His son was indeed overbearing, but what could he say?

"Let me be honest with you. This arena which is at such a low

level is stupid. If your grandson is here, he will sweep every rival on the stage!" Ye Nantian proudly said, "I am not underestimating or looking down upon those young lads from these clans. Compared to Xiao Xiao... Hmm... These young men are like glowworms, and my son is like a full moon! Oh, that would be overestimating them. Anyways, they are not even close to my son..."

...

Chapter 1074: Doesn't Look Good

"The problem is the absence of your son! What you said is difficult to prove!" Gramp Ye spoke angrily, but then he became excited about it. "Nantian, is my grandson... really that good?"

"Absolutely! Look whose son he is!" Ye Nantian's solemn face finally showed a smile.

That was a spoiling smile.

Gramp Ye half closed his eyes, soaked in the imagination of his grandson's face, and showed a longing smile in the face.

"Ah. Xiao Xiao is not here. It won't help no matter how powerful he is. Nantian, you have been teaching the youngsters in the clan recently. You know best about those kids. How many lotuses do you think... we can keep with us this time?"

They criticized the clan as they wanted, but Gramp Ye still cared for the clan in spite of himself.

"The arena..." Ye Nantian honestly didn't like to be involved in this affair. He didn't even want to make any comments. However, he had to think about it since his father asked him to.

After thinking for a while, he spoke in a deep voice, "About ten of our men have eighty percent odds to win if we don't have to fight any extraordinary rivals. Another ten have fifty percent chance to win. About twenty of the rest can try for their luck but only have a thirty percent chance to win. If we are lucky, several of these twenty men will win."

"In your opinion, we can get about thirty lotuses in this arena event. Is that correct?" Ye Shuqing's face turned pale.

"Yes. And it is an optimistic estimation. It will roughly be the number you said." Ye Nantian measured all the clans' powers in his mind and said, "If unluckily the other clans deliberately targeted us, we will get no more than twenty. To fight the average horse

with the best one, to fight the worst horse with the average one, and to lose the fight against the best horse with our worst, it was an old battle strategy. I believe you understand it!"

Gramp Ye stayed silent.

He knew the other clans would target Ye Clan on the stage. He also knew the other clans would use the strategy Ye Nantian just mentioned.

All in all, Ye Clan was going to have a tough time!

Ye Clan could never defeat the joint force of all the other clans who were from inside ten thousand miles!

Ye Clan was lucky enough to not collapse in the previous fights against those clans.

They had to attend the arena. The only thing they could do was to try their best to save as many as lotuses as they could!

"If the prescriptive age was over us..." Ye Nantian blandly said, "If I can go attend the fights, I can make sure none of the lotuses would go to other's pocket!"

"It's a pity you can't." Gramp Ye made a deep sigh.

"I won't go attend the fights even if I could." Ye Nantian rolled his eyes. "They murdered my brother. My son can't come home because of them. I am not stupid. I won't devote a bit to this clan! I am not a fool!"

In fact, he hadn't said everything. Regeneration Ink Lotus meant nothing to him. He had plenty of supreme dan beads which were given to him by his son. Those were stunning treasures. Anyone of them could dazzle all the other people in the clan. However, he wouldn't take it out to save the clan.

[My son gave them to me. Why should I use them on this ruthless clan?]

He wasn't thinking too highly of it. Although the lotuses meant a

great deal to Misty Cloud Palace, they weren't valuable to the other people who were not people of Misty Cloud Palace!

Ye Nantian could just go talk to a dominant sect, such as the seven great sects, and offer some supreme dan beads. He would definitely get the great sect to accept Ye Clan as their ally. Ye Clan could shortly become a proxy of a great sect in Oracle District!

Supreme dan was something people hadn't seen for too long in Qing-Yun Realm. It meant a great deal to any sects!

All dan-makers that served the great sects had brilliant capabilities. Unlike Ye Xiao, a fake dan-maker, they were trapped in the bottleneck in the path of dan-making. All they needed was an opportunity to upgrade to a new level.

Supreme dan was the opportunity they all dreamt of!

If they could get a supreme dan bead and analyze it, the inspiration would improve them immediately!

Ye Xiao had given Han Bingxue a Heaven Climbing Dan bead. It was undoubtedly a great thing, but it wasn't that valuable to the great sects. Usually, a cultivator could take no more than one bead in their life. It would provide cultivation of thirty years, however, the cultivation energy wasn't pure. The cultivator had to spend a lot of time to refine and digest it. It was a waste of time, and it might bring a reverse impact on the cultivator!

Heaven Climbing Dan in high level could provide fifty years of cultivation. It was purer, however, it took a longer time to fully digest the dan beads.

A cultivator could still only take one bead. To take more wouldn't add more effect.

Heaven Climbing Dan with dan glow was basically the best outcome that just a few dan makers in the history of Qing-Yun Realm created. It provided an addition of a hundred years of cultivation with high purity. It didn't require a long time to digest.

Most importantly, it was possible to take multiple of it. However, every one more bead a cultivator took, they only got half of the efficacy as the former one. The tenth dan bead would be totally powerless. In other words, no more than three hundred years of cultivation could be added by taking Heaven Climbing Dan with dan glow!

As for the higher level Heaven Climbing Dan, not to mention supreme dan beads with dan cloud, even dan beads with dan mist had never been successfully made in Qing-Yun Realm. That was why Han Bingxue was so surprised and unbelieving when Ye Xiao gave the dan beads to him!

One hundred Heaven Climbing Dan beads in supreme level couldn't give him ten thousand years of cultivation, but he could get at least nine thousand!

After hearing what Ye Nantian said, Gramp Ye was speechless.

When the father and son looked at each other silently, a series of footsteps sounded in a hurry.

A guard hurried in.

"Gramp Ye, Brother Ye, there are two men outside the door. One of them claims to be..." The guard looked at Ye Nantian, "Well..."

"To be what?" Ye Nantian frowned. Apparently, he was annoyed by the paused report.

Ye Nantian had been a great commander in the Lan of Han-Yang for a long time. He had always been decisive. He didn't like the dragging way of doing things. In the old days, he would have gotten the guard captured and cudgeled dozens of times as a penalty!

"A young man claims to be Brother Ye's son," the guard answered in a hesitating manner.

...

Chapter 1075: Ye Xiao Is Home

"What?"

Ye Shuqing Gramp Ye and Ye Nantian both stood up abruptly.

Their dramatic reaction freaked the guard out.

"What does the young man look like?" Ye Nantian nervously asked.

"He's pretty young. About seventeen or eighteen. A handsome face... He looks seventy percent like you, but much more handsome than you..." Before the guard finished, Ye Nantian had left the room fast like a whirlwind.

"Stupid kid! Why does he have to come when everything is dangerous... This is not a good time..." Ye Nantian was worried. "Foolish kid... other than coming now, it is much better for you to come here after Ye Clan leadership gets damaged along with the other clans... Isn't it great that you have an opportunity to take advantage of it... Gosh. You are still too young. You are simple-minded. Why do I have such a silly son..."

Gramp Ye followed Ye Nantian out hurriedly. When he heard his son murmuring, he felt awkward, and his lips started to twist.

[You bastard. Why do I have such an ungrateful son!]

[I guess he was right about himself. He was unbelievably protective to his own people.]

He followed Ye Nantian out to the gate and saw two men standing at the door.

He glanced at them and then completely ignored the older one. He just stared at the young man who was wearing white clothes.

The young man had sword-like eyebrows, star-like eyes, a slim body, and a handsome face. As he stood at the door, he looked so pretty, just like a conspicuous lord in the chaotic world.

He also had an extraordinary aura. When Gramp Ye took a first look at him, he felt this young man was better than all the young men in the clan!

He also realized that this young man's face was exactly like his son's.

In his eyes, the young man was seventy percent like the present Ye Nantian, but ninety percent like Ye Nantian in his teenage years!

He even felt that he might be more handsome than his son used to be!

Such a peerlessly handsome man!

He was sure that this young man was his grandson!

His real grandson!

His grandson, who must be better than his son, had a better appearance than his son!

"Xiao Xiao!" Ye Nantian shouted and rushed over, "Why are you here?"

He sounded pleased but also anxious and angry.

His son came back to the clan abruptly in such a miserable situation. People in the clan would definitely use it to stir some chaos.

Even if Ye Xiao contributed to the clan, there would be no reward for him! The others would take the credit that he should take!

Ye Nantian still remembered the day when the forefather destroyed the evidence he had collected after lots of hard work!

Ye Clan people's hearts had rotten!

"Father!" Ye Xiao smiled warmly.

When he saw the square face again, he felt settled and safe, even though he was not a bit weaker than his father at the moment,

even stronger.

The blood bond between them was impossible to suppress. "It has been quite a long time, so I thought I could come home."

"Oh. It is not a good time though..." Ye Nantian sighed. "That's alright. What was done has been done after all. Quickly come in... Urh, by the way, this is your grandfather... It is the first time you two have met each other."

Ye Shuqing was so thrilled that his face turned red and his voice was shaking. "You are... You are Xiao Xiao... What a handsome man. Better than your father. Really... Good kid... Good lad..."

Ye Xiao failed to hide the expression of resistance in his face. He unwillingly said, "Grandpa."

Then he looked back at Ye Nantian and said, "I heard... that nobody said anything to protect us back to the days..."

When Gramp Ye heard it, his face turned stiff and gloomy.

Ye Nantian pretended to be angry. "What are you talking about? He is your grandfather."

Then he whispered to Ye Xiao, "You are right, but don't blame him anymore. He couldn't do anything. Because of your mother and I, your grandpa was expelled from the chair of the Chief. Our group fell to the bottom in the clan... The cultivation resources we have used in the Land of Han-Yang were mostly from your grandparents. They have been saving their resources for us..."

Ye Xiao's face finally looked softer.

Although he knew those resources hadn't helped them on making progress in cultivation, he figured his grandparents must have done quite a lot considering their own situation. If he was a worse father, he could have killed his own son to protect his privilege. It was impressive that his grandfather could do so much for his father!

After all, not all fathers could be as thoughtful and devotional as Ye Nantian...

"Come in and let's talk inside." Gramp Ye sighed and regretfully said, "We didn't take care of the kid... Come on. Let's go home. Let your grandma have a closer look at you. She must be overjoyed when she sees you..."

Ye Xiao slightly coughed and said, "This is... a good friend of mine... We met on the road... I am lucky to have his protection all the way here..."

'This' is undoubtedly Han Bingxue.

Han Bingxue didn't dare to be impolite. He humbly bowed and said, "Well... That... Uncle... Hmm... Bosses... I... Please accept the respect from a plebeian..."

He was distraught in mind.

[You have taken the boy's body, so you call that man grandpa... It's okay for you... What about me?]

After thinking for a while, he finally decided to call them 'bosses'. He wanted to call himself a humble nephew, but in the end, he decided to call himself a plebeian... However, it still awkwardly shocked Ye Nantian and Ye Shuqing.

[What does that mean? He looks skinny and lacking in an influential figure's aura. He talks weirdly. What does that pretty little face do to help? We will never speak to you if you are not with Xiao Xiao!]

Neither Ye Nantian nor Gramp Ye had reached Dao Origin Stage. Han Bingxue was so powerful that he didn't look mighty. Ye Nantian and his father thought that he was weak, at least just average, so they didn't really pay attention to him.

"My son has come to Qing-Yun Realm from a lower realm not long ago. He is new to the martial world. I appreciate your help, young brother." Ye Nantian amicably said, "May I have your

honorable name, young brother?"

...

Chapter 1076: Generous Han Bingxue

"My name is Han." Han Bingxue wouldn't say his full name. He just told them his family name, then he changed the topic, "I felt familiar to Brother Ye when I saw him. Some people are always distant even after the time of a whole life, while some others become good friends within seconds. We became good friends for the first sight. It felt like three days when we couldn't see each other for one day. When I knew he was coming here, I had free time, so I decided to accompany him. About protection or the other things, they are all responsibilities of a friend, which are not worth mentioning. Haha..."

Ye Xiao was surprised to hear it.

He didn't expect Han Bingxue could act so decently when he intended to.

The formulae that came out from his mouth was so fluent...

"Please come in." Ye Nantian amicably invited.

No matter what, the man had protected his son, so he was unquestionably a nice man.

The four of them went to Gramp Ye's place together.

The news about Ye Nantian's son spread in the entire Ye Clan like a wild fire.

"What? Ye Nantian's son has come?" Ye Clan's Chief, Ye Shuxin raised his eyebrows when he spoke.

"Yes."

"Really?"

"Confirmed."

"Hmm. Off you go."

"Aye."

Looking at the guard's back who was leaving after the report, Ye Shuxin rubbed his beard, glaring with a pair of eyes which were full of coldness and changing lights. After a while, he shouted, "Guards!"

...

At the moment, in Gramp Ye's backyard, it was full of joy and laughter.

The old lady had been ill for many years until Ye Nantian returned. She was finally better. As she saw her grandson, she felt elated, and the illness was mostly gone.

When they were eating at the table, she kept grabbing Ye Xiao's hand and wouldn't let go.

Her eyes were staring at Ye Xiao's face all the time as if she never felt enough to look at her grandson. Her eyes were full of love and comfort.

Ye Xiao enjoyed it at the beginning. After all, he had longed for such a feeling for two lives. However, he couldn't endure for so long, so he gave a hint to Han Bingxue with a blink.

Han Bingxue understood it immediately. He raised up a glass and casually said, "Well, as it appears, the old lady is sick. May I hold your wrist to check?"

"Oh? Brother Han knows leechcraft?" Ye Nantian was surprised. "My mother is suffering from the old illness. I appreciate that Brother Han would like to diagnose it."

That was what he said, but he never had hope in the heart.

His mother's illness had been there for many years. It was not that simple to cure! When illness came, it came like a landslide. When illness left, it left like reeling off raw silk. People in old age were physically weak. The only way to make them better was to let them recover slowly. That was why even though he had a lot of supreme dan beads, he didn't dare to use them on the old lady.

Since Han Bingxue had nicely asked about it, Ye Nantian figured it would be impolite to turn it down.

After pretentiously holding her wrist for a few seconds, Han Bingxue showed a confident expression and said, "Nothing serious. I have a few dan beads that our ancestors passed to us. Just take some, and you will be alright."

Ye Xiao twisted his lips.

[Holy hell. I must have mistaken this prick. I thought he was good at pretending, yet he was full of flaws pretending to be a doctor!]

[It takes four steps to make a diagnosis. You held her wrist for just a few seconds and then pretended to be confident about it. Really? At least you should pretend to be lost in thoughts for a few minutes, and ask some questions before you promise her the dan beads!]

[And you said those dan beads are from your ancestors? How ridiculous!]

[Do you think you are a barefoot doctor who earns money from selling patrimonial medicines?]

[Why don't you make it more dramatic? Why don't you shout that your dan beads could cure all diseases?]

Ye Nantian and Ye Shuqing were both a bit annoyed by Han Bingxue's levity. [This guy is fallacious. It is a favor to us if you can cure her, and it is reasonable that you can't. How could you misinform us... That is unacceptable...]

However, Han Bingxue turned over his right hand, and a bottle of dan beads appeared in his hand. He opened the bottle and the glow brimmed with a pleasant scent. "Here are ten dan beads which stabilize the physical condition. Take one bead a day... It will cure all the old lady's illnesses and make her look younger. My patrimonial dan beads are..."

"Ahem..." Ye Xiao coughed.

[Bastard! Do you think you are a barefoot doctor again? How could you say it cures all the illnesses? How dare you say she will look younger? How come I never know Pei-Yuan Dan can make people younger... Listen to you, you are vividly a swindler.]

However, Ye Shuqing and Ye Nantian both thrust up. Apparently, they were both shocked by the dan beads!

However, Gramp Ye was not quite experienced. He knew those must be some valuable dan beads, but he didn't expect supreme dan beads!

Ye Nantian knew it! He secretly glanced at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao had given him several supreme level Pei-Yuan Dan beads in the Land of Han-Yang. He even had many supreme dan beads at the moment. When he saw the dan beads, he knew that his son must have hired somebody to do this for him...

However, he didn't think it was a meaningful thing to do so. Everything was alright when nobody saw supreme dan beads, but if supreme dan beads showed up in the world, it might bring troubles along with the blessing. [The kid is smart, but maybe takes it too simple!]

However, he felt lucky that only his own people saw the dan beads. Han Bingxue was the only outsider. He figured Han Bingxue must be a trustworthy guy since Ye Xiao would give him the valuable dan beads!

Unlike Ye Nantian, Gramp Ye was excited when he saw the dan beads.

He didn't recognize the supreme dan bead, but he knew those must be at least some dan beads with dan glow.

With those dan beads, his wife might be cured.

"Thank you so much... But... How can we accept such valuable

things... They are your patrimonial objects... How could we..." Gramp Ye nagged. He talked mannerly, yet his eyes never moved away from the bottle, as if he didn't want Han Bingxue to take it back.

"Just a small favor. Nothing worth mentioning." Han Bingxue was acting more and more politely, "Besides, this is the first time I visited your place. It is reasonable that I bring you some gifts. There are just a few dan beads. Please accept... Heh, heh. Don't keep it in mind."

Afterward, he reached one hand into his clothes again, "Oh, right. Here are a few Beautifying Dan beads... I guess they are useful to the old lady... Oh, and the Prolongation dan... for both of you... The Bone Ablutionary Dan too..."

Under the watch of the stunned people, Han Bingxue kept taking out bottles of dan beads, like he was worried that he didn't play well.

...

Chapter 1077: The Night of Miracle

As Han Bingxue thought, the dan beads were given by Ye Xiao which were all simple dan beads that he didn't need for a long time. It was pretty weighty after all, so he decided to give them away as soon as he could...

Several bottles were thrown onto the table again in a few seconds.

Gramp Ye's eyebrows were flicking.

[This... friend of my grandson... is so generous, isn't he?]

[No, no, no... This is much more than 'generous'!]

[These are mysterious things that are nearly impossible to find in the history. None of these things ever has been seen in Qing-Yun Realm for so many years. How come he just took them out in piles? Am I... Am I... Am I dreaming?]

Ye Nantian was also confused. Did his son ask the man to give them all those dan beads? Or was this guy actually a mighty dan-maker?

He had always believed that a mysterious man was supporting Ye Xiao secretly. Was Han Bingxue the marvelous man... [Hmm. This guy has so many valuable treasures, yet doesn't look like an influential figure at all. Is he a top-ranged superior cultivator who was so powerful that he doesn't need to be like one?]

Unlike the suspicious Ye Nantian and Gramp Ye, the old lady only felt glad. She had already held the bottles with different kinds of dan beads in her arms.

She embarrassedly smiled, looking at Gramp Ye and Ye Nantian.

"Granny, no need to feel embarrassed. He is my good friend. A brother. Not a stranger. His are mine and mine are his. Just accept them," Ye Xiao said.

"That's right. Mine are all his. His are still his. It's alright." Han Bingxue hurriedly followed up. It seemed he suddenly thought of something, so he said, "By the way... Gramp Ye and... Uncle Ye... Ahem... are both cultivators. I have a few other dan beads for you two. They should be helpful for you."

Then he started to take out more bottles. "Mai Connecting Dan... Hmmm... There are ten. Sky Reaching Dan... Heaven Spirit Dan... Purple Cloud Dan... Cough, cough... Heaven Climbing Dan... One of these can provide one hundred years of cultivation, and you can take multiple of it. The efficacy won't be deducted. Oh... There are twenty of it... Maybe you can share them!"

Ye Shuqing's two eyes almost popped out.

He nearly passed out...

[These...]

[Are these marvelous dan beads like cabbage to him?

[Are these still rare dan beads?]

If Gramp Ye had sharper eyes and more experience, he would know that Hang Bingxue was giving him some supreme dan beads, and it would literally make his veins explode. It was not a joke. What happened was too astonishing!

Ye Nantian looked at the bottles of dan beads piling up on the table within seconds. Han Bingxue didn't stop taking out more. Ye Nantian was more and more certain that this guy was the mysterious master who had been helping Ye Xiao. [What a mighty man... How enigmatic... He actually pretends to be like a clown... This is too much...]

"Granny, why don't you just swallow a dan bead. Don't mind others, it is most important to take care of yourself first." Ye Xiao opened a jade bottle and took out a piece of Pei-Yuan Dan.

"Yes. Good. Good." The old lady laughed so happily that it was like a flower in her face. Without hesitation, she swallowed the

dan bead.

Her grandson just got home, and he was feeding her with a dan bead... She had no reason to say no.

It was something curative that he was feeding her. However, even if it weren't, even if it were poison, the old lady would still swallow it with pleasure. For many years, she hadn't been happy like this...

Everybody stayed silent when she took the dan bead.

It started to work on her with waves of a dense scent.

Gramp Ye and Ye Nantian kept watching her as if a miracle was going to take place.

Under their watch, the old lady's pale face was turning red in a visible rate. At the same time, some tiny bits of dark material were oozing out on her skins...

Those were the impurities inside her body being forced out by the efficacy of the dan bead.

The old lady exclaimed and hurried off the table. Most women were obsessed with cleanliness. The old lady might be old now, but she still cared about her hygiene. How could she endure the weird smell that came from her own body?

The four men looked at each other and then started to laugh.

Gramp Ye laughed like a flower. He raised up his glass again and again. "Cheers! Let's drink!"

The four of them ate and drank. Four hours had passed.

With the sound of footsteps, a woman came out with a full face of a smile.

Gramp Ye was stunned. He stood up immediately and even knocked over the chair...

"Ah!" Even Ye Nantian was shocked.

The woman who just came out appeared to be a middle-aged woman, with fair skin, long dark hair, a big smile in the face, tears in the eyes...

It was precisely the old Lady Ye.

Her face... Was she back to youth?

Lady Ye was too thrilled to say the words fluently, "I... I... ate one bead from each kind in those bottles... and... and I became like this..."

Gramp Ye was stunned!

The huge surprise had made him faint!

...

That night was an unforgettable night of miracle for Ye Shuqing's family!

The person who made all this happen was exactly the young lord Ye Xiao, who had just returned to the family!

After the drinks, the old lady started to talk to Ye Xiao. She just couldn't look enough at her grandson. Han Bingxue went to rest alone.

Ye Nantian and Gramp Ye took every second to digest the efficacy of the dan beads.

Ye Nantian was still lost in confusion. He didn't know whether the dan beads were from Ye Xiao or Han Bingxue. He thought that Han Bingxue was Ye Xiao's secret master. If the dan beads were from Ye Xiao, he should just be grateful to his own son. If they were from Han Bingxue, a great dan-maker who had been teaching his son all the time, it would be too big a favor that was difficult to return.

However, although he was shocked, it didn't make him feel the astonishment for a long time because his heart was holding the confusion!

Ye Shuqing was different. He couldn't calm down.

"How do we return the favor after accepting such the great gifts..." Gramp Ye was still in excitement but also worried. "Those dan beads... not to mention our group, even the entire Ye Clan in the prime days didn't have the power to return the favor. The value of these dan beads is unmeasurable..."

"Unfortunately these dan beads are an irresistible attraction to us." Gramp Ye truly felt nervous. "That man gave us so many dan beads just because he is a good friend to Xiao... I don't know what level these dan beads are... But I am pretty sure these dan beads can make an average scale clan immediately become a big clan!"

"With all these dan beads, why would we be afraid of the other groups and the other clans... What does it matter if we will lose all the fights in the arena..."

"But... I just don't feel right about it!"

...

Chapter 1078: Enticement of the Art of Dan

"Why don't you just take a good rest. There is nothing wrong. The guy gave us a lot of valuable things. How can that go wrong? Be careful about your mentality!"

Ye Nantian smiled and said, "I need to be frank to you on one other point. He gave these things to us, so they could only be used on us... Don't generously give them away. You might not get credit by doing that, and these dan beads might attract greedy attention from the others. That would destroy us all. To be honest with you, these dan beads are in incredible levels. They are not something ordinary people could use. It is our good fortune to have them, but to show off or give them away will lead to huge trouble..."

Gramp Ye nodded. "Absolutely. I am fully aware of it."

Ye Nantian coldly smiled and said, "You know it, but it doesn't mean you won't do it. You just took away one Heaven Climbing Dan bead. What do you want to do with it? Do you want to give it to the forefather? Huh? Don't you dare deny it!"

Gramp Ye blushed. He embarrassedly said, "The forefather has been stuck in level two of Dao Origin Stage for a long time. He doesn't have much time left. I think with the help of one Heaven Climbing Dan bead, he may be able to break it out and reach level three. Then..."

Ye Nantian sneered. "Then what? Would he appreciate your devotion? As the protector of Ye Clan, he will only take whatever we do for him as granted. He will only ask you for more dan beads. He will make you tell him how to get the dan beads and where your dan beads are from. If you don't answer him, he will turn ruthless to you. He will make a decision to let himself be the guy who takes charge of distributing the dan beads, and speaks like it is the only way to benefit everybody in the clan, for the sake of the clan. Father, don't you agree? You can argue against me as long as you

think you have a good reason to!"

"No... He won't... Forefather is not that kind of person... No way... He would never..." Gramp Ye murmured like he was trying to persuade himself also arguing against Ye Nantian.

"No? Father, do you even believe what you just said?" Ye Nantian sneered.

"Fine. I won't give him the dan bead since you don't allow me to. I will follow your words. Okay?" Gramp Ye awkwardly spoke.

"Just focus on cultivation. This is the only thing we have to do. Our own improvement is the priority..." Ye Nantian said.

"That's true. It is better we become stronger than the others do. Oh right. Did you ask your son about his cultivation level?" Gramp Ye suddenly thought of such a question.

Ye Nantian slapped on his own leg and said, "Oh I forgot... Let's ask him tomorrow. The kid actually didn't report it to me by himself and actually made me ask him first. Stupid son..."

...

For cultivators, it was always a priority to improve themselves.

Especially when they had an excellent opportunity to make a great progress. One should seize the opportunity and take full use of it as soon as possible!

Only after that would the opportunity offered be theirs alone.

If they kept the opportunity and didn't make use of it soon, it might eventually benefit others...

Ye Nantian and Gramp Ye had made the decision, so they focused on their own cultivation.

Ye Xiao had a conversation with the old lady, and then he found an excuse to leave. The old lady continued the beauty treatment...

For a woman, it was not the most important thing to improve in

cultivation. In fact, nothing could compare regaining beauty and youth!

...

Ye Xiao sneakily went to Han Bingxue's room and then wiped the cold sweat on the forehead. "Hmm... I looked forward to the feeling of home, but now I just feel weird."

Han Bingxue rolled his eyes up and didn't respond.

With his high position in martial art, if not for Ye Xiao, he would never be in touch with such a small clan.

It was boring.

He even had to lower himself to act like an entourage. It was not just boring. It was annoying!

However, he was interested in one thing.

"Boss, I have a question..." He frowned and looked lost in thoughts. "About Heaven Climbing Dan."

"Hmm? What is it? Didn't I make it clear to you?" Ye Xiao looked at him.

"One of it can provide one hundred years of cultivation. I can take multiple of it, and it won't be deducted in effect. I tried, and it is real, although the efficacy was deducted a little bit after I took many. One hundred dan beads could surely provide nine thousand years of cultivation at least. Is it correct?"

He continued, "According to this, if I take ten thousand of it, am I going to get one million years of cultivation?"

He apparently didn't fully understand it yet.

He had been cultivating so hard on his own, and sometimes, he would get some dan beads by luck. He had used some, so he knew that dan beads were good things. However, he never truly understood how it worked.

"Your problem is problematic, both in the broad sense or in the narrow sense." Ye Xiao frowned and looked at him.

Han Bingxue giggled.

In fact, although Ye Xiao said so, he also didn't quite understand it when he used to be Xiao Monarch.

He started to understand it only after he accessed the area of dan-making.

"First of all, in the narrow sense, you misunderstand one thing. You said it yourself, for Heaven Climbing Dan in supreme level, when you take a few of it, it won't have its effects reduced. However, when you take a lot, it still will be. One hundred dan beads technically can provide ten thousand years of cultivation, but in fact only about nine thousand. That's true. If you take ten thousand of it, you won't get anything after the first fifteen thousand years of cultivation. Dan beads in supreme level are extraordinary, but they still have limits. Our bodies also have limitations on digesting them. It is impossible to keep improving forever!"

"Hmm. That's true. I was being stupid. I only thought of reaching the sky within one step. I thought I could get one hundred years of cultivation within seconds! What a dream!" Han Bingxue giggled.

"That was in a narrow sense. In the broad sense, what you thought is ridiculous and foolish. To improve oneself with dan beads is basically a shortcut to success." Ye Xiao organized his thoughts and said with discretion, "Such a shortcut may lead to a satisfactory outcome, but it is unwise to abuse it."

"No matter what dan beads you are using, you better have a certain capability to cooperate with it. That is the best choice."

...

Chapter 1079: One's Self Was the Key

"For example, if you give two dan beads, and of each of which will provide one hundred years of cultivation to a Human Origin Stage cultivator, you kill him in a self-explosion. The spiritual energy in the dan bead has a certain amount. Dan bead would not absorb more energy, or reduce the energy inside it. It is a good thing that your body can endure it, but if you can't, you die. It is a waste of time and also the valuable dan bead."

"So those talented men who have been taking dan beads since they were kids when the superior cultivators in their clans keep supporting them may look powerful, however, there are hidden dangers inside themselves. If the troubles burst out, they will die immediately!"

"Besides, you are not definitely going to be improved after taking some dan beads... There are limitations."

"The world is never perfect. Dan is also defective. If there is no limitation of dan beads, anybody can become invincible as long as they get enough dan beads. Isn't it?" Ye Xiao said.

"I know that. I am just confused," Han Bingxue said.

"I understand. I know what you are confused about." Ye Xiao smiled, "The perfect timing when you take the dan beads depends on your own status. In the right time, take the right dan bead, when you are in a right status. That will make it work most harmoniously."

"For example, when you just reach level one of Dao Origin Stage, Heaven Climbing Dan will boost your cultivation capability. You will be greatly improved by it. It wouldn't be difficult for you to handle the energy from the dan bead. The only thing you do is to wait until your body fully digested the efficacy."

"However, if you are on the top of level one of Dao Origin Stage,

Heaven Climbing Dan will be of its least effect on you because you are in a bottleneck! Your cultivation capability will be limited to a certain level. The efficacy of the dan bead will be wasted. However, sometimes, such dan beads will help you break through to a new level. It is just such a rare chance. It mostly only happens to the main character of a legendary story, not to any normal people!

"In a dan-maker's perspective, a man in the top of the first level needs Mai Connecting Dan. It has the specialty of level breaking and gives the man a bigger chance to break the limitation. A bigger chance is the most important thing. It is the most important effect of the dan beads which help to break levels! However, it mainly depends on the cultivator himself whether he could break through or not. He had to be in a higher level mindset and comprehension to make sure the breakthrough happens.

"If not, it would be meaningless for the cultivator to break through a level by only taking some special dan beads. The unbalance of the cultivator would cause a reverse impact and lead to a severe consequence. The cultivator might be seriously injured or just die in self-explosion! It's not a joke!

"Besides, dan beads can be useful for cultivators. Some of them improve cultivation power, some of them recover spiritual qi, some can provide a bigger chance for the cultivator to break through, yet sometimes, they also kill.

"Don't question this. Think deeper and you will find that you cultivation can be improved by taking dan beads, but your mindset can never. It means you will have a significant shortage. The shortage can only be fixed by endless practical fights, trials, survivals, experiences of life and death... These can enhance your mindset and make it comparable to your cultivation level.

"During the improvement, most of the cultivators died. It should usually take them dozens of years to cultivate, yet because the dan bead pushed them to the new level, they had to experience all that should happen in dozens of years within one year. Otherwise, they

will die... Think about it, experiencing the life and death situations of dozens of years within one year... How big could their chances to survive be?"

Ye Xiao sounded distressed, "To improve the cultivation level is a shortcut indeed, but it can't be misused."

"A young man can never be as experienced as an eighty-year-old man, no matter how mature he seems to be!"

Ye Xiao stared at Han Bingxue. "An eighty years old man has truly experienced a lot of things, a lot of betrayals, ups and downs... Otherwise, how does he become so old in his heart? Only time can give him the improvement. Nobody can get it easily!"

"I guess you know how cruel the experience could be, don't you?"

Han Bingxue was lost in thoughts for a while and took a cold breath in.

"For me, I believe in only the power I got from hard work. The dan beads' most prominent use is to assist me in the battle. When I am exhausted, I will take one. It cures my wounds and extends my life. I think I won't talk much about the old days..." Ye Xiao said.

"Most importantly, no matter what kind of dan beads, even dan beads in the supreme level have potential hazards. However, dan beads in a higher level have smaller hazards.

"No matter in what level, even dan beads in the supreme level have dan poison. Medication is a double-edged sword. It's just a saying! The poison in the dan beads is difficult to detoxify. Even bone ablution couldn't clean it! When one digests the dan bead, they also digest the poison at the same time. It became a part of the body afterward!

"The more we take dan beads, the more poison there is inside us."

"As far as I am concerned, only the thunder trials that happen when one is ascending to the upper realm can clean the poison from inside one's body!"

"If we don't expel the poison, when it becomes a big amount, it will burst in impact someday.

"When it bursts, there is nothing we can do.

"Dan is medicine. Medicine is a double-edged sword. The dan poison in dan beads is terrible!

"This is the reason why none of the real influential figures in history became super powerful figures by having dan beads, even though the dan-making technique is so popular in the world and dan-makers are so respected by all the powerful forces.

"Only by experiencing everything by oneself, by enhancing one's mindset and use the mindset to sense the world, use the sensation to upgrade one's cultivation level, would one be able to keep gradually moving up! This is the only way to strengthen one's foundation to become stronger.

"The stronger people have a smaller limitation on taking dan beads. You have reached level nine of Dao Origin Stage, and your mindset is stronger than it should be... In other words, your cultivation level doesn't fit your high-grade mindset."

...

Chapter 1080: Come with Trouble

"That is why cultivators like you can take the best use of Heaven Climbing Dan. The dan beads will unleash all the effects.

"However, those who don't have strong mindsets, and only want to upgrade one's levels by taking dan beads will get very little. Instead, they will put themselves into many potential dangers. Any mistakes could lead them to death both physically and mentally."

"We are both experienced cultivators. We both know that a higher cultivation level doesn't make a cultivator more powerful. A newly born baby who has a million years of cultivation can be easily killed by an ordinary person. It won't take much effort."

"We must not misunderstand this," Ye Xiao said.

Han Bingxue nodded and agreed.

...

The night was undoubtedly a night of celebration for Ye Shuqing's family. However, when the light of dawn shined, the world the next morning, some disharmonious voice sounded in a hurry.

Many people gathered in front of Gramp Ye's place.

They were all elites of Ye Clan, who were now gathering in Gramp Ye's yard. There were at least a hundred of them.

Some of them looked nervous and anxious, some others were gloomy, while the rest were hostile.

The hostile ones represented more than half of the people.

Forefather Ye Tianchen wasn't among them because he had been injured and was resting. Eight of the nine elders take presence.

The men who were in the same generation as Gramp Ye were all here. People who were the same age as Ye Nantian, except a few who had died, were all here too.

Most of the younger generation, who were the same age as Ye Xiao, didn't come. Only over a dozen of them were present.

This should be an event among the older generations. It was meaningless to let the youngsters attend it.

Ye Xiao was in his own room, observing those people with his spiritual mind.

He believed his father and grandfather were quite sociable in the clan.

There was no doubt about it. As there were both good and bad lucks, there were also good and bad social intercoursess!

Over eighty percent of the one hundred more people were with hostility!

"If I kill all of the eighty percent..." Ye Xiao thought of it.

"Your father will probably kill you. What do you think if I make the killing? A super powerful figure does it, then your father won't say a word against it." Han Bingxue squinted at him.

"No. Really unnecessary!" Ye Xiao humphed and said, "If I kill those people, my father will take me to a small room..."

"He will beat you up hard even not to kill you, right?" Han Bingxue asked.

"Brother, you do lack of imagination. Why don't you see it in a good side? He will prepare a full table of good meal and fine liquor and say, 'well done my son, well done!' And we will dine!" Ye Xiao gloated.

Han Bingxue was speechless. After a while, he said, "I don't believe it! I can only say that you have too much imagination in your head. How can you picture it like that? Impressive! Frightening! Lunatic! Unspeakable!"

...

Outside the room.

Somebody talked to Ye Nantian, who was coming out to greet them, "Ye Nantian, I heard that your son has come home."

Ye Nantian gave a pretending smile and answered, "That's true. Why?"

The middle-aged man pretended to smile too. "Nothing. I wonder why a youngster doesn't come see his family when he comes home. Is he too terrified to see us, or too ashamed?"

Ye Nantian sneered. "Nothing indeed. What kind of family do you think you are? How could my son be the ashamed one? This is not funny!"

Another person raged up, "Ye Nantian, what do you mean? The entire clan was made a scapegoat because of your romantic debt! We were nearly destroyed! Now your son comes back, and you actually show us such an attitude? After the years down the lower world, you did enhance your shamelessness, didn't you?"

Ye Nantian laughed loudly, "You have no idea. My golden shameless face art is in an incredible level! I literally won't have anybody in my eyes! So what? Do you dislike me now? Why don't you come and hit me? Welcome! Oh, wait... Do you really dare?"

In the guest room, Han Bingxue clicked his tongue and praised, "Your father is more like an ostentatious person than others. An ostentatious person would only boast in ninety-nine percent, yet your father boasts the additional one percent, and made it even two percent, three percent, and even four percent." [1]

Ye Xiao humphed and glared at him.

He genuinely wanted to respond with 'your father is an ostentatious person! You families all boast the additional one, two, three, four percent!'

The guy outside continued in a fierce tone, "Ye Nantian, as I understand, you mean... your son is not one of our clan and does not share the same blood with us? What if your son did something

stupid and messed with some influential figures who will eventually destroy our clan, you are still indifferent and even enjoy it?"

Ye Nantian laughed loudly, "If that happens, I will make a big feast for my son and raise my glass to tell him, 'Well done, my son. Well done! Bravo! Great job!'"

The crowd burst in a surprised uproar when they heard him.

Han Bingxue was stunned. He never thought that what Ye Xiao just said was actually the truth. After a while, he said to Ye Xiao with admiration, "Good for you!"

Ye Nantian's words lit the fuse. The yard burst into chaos. People all started to attack him with all kinds of abusive words. Ye Nantian just kept showing them a disdainful face with a cold smile.

Ye Shuqing looked nervous and gloomy. He spoke to Ye Nantian in a low voice, "Why did you provoke them?"

Ye Nantian showed a weird smile and said, "Father, do you think that if I didn't provoke them and stoop to compromise, they will let go of Xiao Xiao?"

Gramp Ye was shocked. Was Ye Nantian wrong?

No!

Gramp Ye's choice in the old days had shown the outcome of stooping low!

Those men were here for a simple reason. They were here to see what Ye Nantian's son was like. If his son seemed to have potential, they would target him as the first person they needed to take care of!

After all, Ye Xiao had another identity in the clan. He was the lawful prior grandson of the clan. He had a natural right to inherit the power of the clan. It was a potential threat to all of the others!

"It is a dangerous time for the clan. Now that your son is back,

why doesn't he think of contributing to the clan? His father only draws misfortunes to the clan. Is he also a coward?" a middle-aged man abruptly shouted.

Ye Nantian's face twitched. He said, "My son never learned any martial art of Ye Clan. Why does he have to make a contribution to this clan? Now how does he do it?"

That middle-aged man was wordless, but he still wouldn't give up, "Even though he didn't learn the martial art, he should still contribute in some way! Otherwise, do you want the clan to feed him for nothing in return? There is no way he can only get fed but do nothing! Even though he is the prior grandson, he still can't!"

Ye Nantian's face was turning colder.

...

[1] He meant Ye Nantian had gone too far on boasting.

Chapter 1081: Overwhelming Aura

Gramp Ye Shuqing made a deep sigh and slowly closed his eyes.

This was his clan.

Those men had been pushing him just like that.

His grandson had only been home for one night, yet those men targeted him like that.

'Even though he didn't learn the martial art, he should still contribute in some way! Otherwise, do you want the clan to feed him for nothing in return? There is no way he can only get fed but do nothing!' These words brought coldness to his heart.

Ye Clan was just a second-rate clan, but it was still an influential force in this area. The theory about nobody in the clan could only get fed but do nothing didn't apply to Ye Clan's own children. However, that middle-aged man still said it. The vile ambition in the man's heart was vividly uncovered.

Apparently, they were going to ruin Gramp Ye's grandson. They wouldn't stop until they did it!

Another guy frowned and said, "Ye Chengbo, what stupid words did you say? He who has no martial power should still contribute to the clan? Fine. Then answer me. Contribute how? Besides, what do you mean the clan won't feed him for nothing in return? No way he can only get fed but do nothing? Ye Chengbo, ask yourself. What have your over a dozen concubines done for the clan? What have they done except to be... done by you? According to what you just said, should we push your concubines up to the stage and let everybody beat them to death?"

This guy who talked looked slim and weak.

As he started to talk, the crowd was in an uproar.

That middle-aged man Ye Chengbo who was being questioned

replied in a dark face, "Ye Xinghui, I never said he should go up to the stage. Why did you impose by force like this and talk nonsense?"

"Didn't you?" Ye Xinghui laughed loudly, "That's right. You didn't precisely say the words. However, we are not fools. Do you think we don't know what you want to say? You said I am talking nonsense, huh? Isn't it exactly what you are doing?"

Another man stood out with anger in the face, "Their child, who has been missing for a long time, just came home and spent merely one night in the house. You all come together to make trouble! How shameless are you to speak about having the same name and same blood? You keep pushing them like this. Don't you fear the scoff of all people in the world?"

"Sixth Uncle is making a mistake." A young man stood out. "Even though they haven't met for a long time, it was more than enough to talk for a whole night... How much do they have to talk about that couldn't be finished in one whole night? Even if they really didn't finish their conversations yet, how could their minor business compare to the clan's future?"

Ye Liangchen stepped out imposingly and said, "What do you mean by that? What an absurd accusation was that! Do you mean Uncle Nantian's son can decide the future of the clan now? Can I understand what you said in this way? Let me ask you something. If you were abandoned for over a dozen years, what would you think and do? We are all in the same clan, having the same blood. How can you be so unnatural to him? Why push him like this?"

The two young men's words triggered another dispute.

The eight elders divided into two sides and started to dispute against each other. The men of the oldest generation were also divided into two groups. The second oldest generation also burst into a drastic conflict. People who were the youngest age, including Ye Liangchen and Ye Meijing, were also having a furious

argument.

All in all, at the moment, people in the yard had divided into two groups who stood clearly against each other, having drastic conflict.

However, those who were supporting Ye Nantian only had a few people, which was just less than thirty. However, the other side had over eighty men, who were in an utterly dominant position!

The two groups of people kept arguing, and the conflict was turning more and more scorching.

It was not quite a good excuse to make trouble on Ye Xiao's return. However, it actually led to a complete rupture of the two groups who always had different opinions!

At this critical moment, if anybody casually attacked, a bloodshed would occur.

Luckily, nobody from other sects was present. Otherwise, they could sneakily make an attack, and Ye Clan people would fight against themselves in the bloodshed, without anybody else. At least Ye Clan would be drastically weakened!

At the moment, only Ye Nantian, Ye Shuqing, and one other old man didn't do anything.

Ye Shuqing looked at the slim old man who stood opposite to him. He didn't say anything but showed a complicated expression in the eyes...

That old man was the current Chief of Ye Clan, Ye Shuxin.

Gramp Ye Shuqing's younger cousin.

In the noisy chaos, the brothers just looked at each other, having a different kind of conflict which was silent.

After a while, Ye Shuqing walked ahead to Ye Shuxin.

"Do you have to be this ruthless?" Ye Shuqing asked bitterly.

Ye Shuxin blandly smiled. "Brother, you are wrong. We are family. There is nothing really that serious. You have gone too far by calling me 'ruthless'."

"My grandson has just come home for one night. Just one night." Ye Shuqing took a deep breath, paused for a second, and said, "My son has only returned for half a year..."

Ye Shuxin stayed silent for a while, and then blandly said, "However, within the half year, my brothers died..."

Ye Shuqing said, "What are you talking about?"

Ye Shuxin lowered the eyelids and blandly said, "And my oldest son too. Died."

Ye Shuqing burst in a fury. "What do you want to say? What more do you want? The entire clan is in your hands. What else do you want?"

Ye Shuxin showed fierceness and evilness in the eyes and said, "I want to say... My brothers can't just die for nothing... Nor can my son..."

Ye Shuqing angrily responded, "And my son should die for nothing?"

Ye Shuxin was surprised. He then blandly said, "Are you admitting it?"

"Admit what?" Ye Shuqing's eyes were full of the flame of anger while staring at his cousin.

"Admit it or not, I have to put an end to it." Ye Shuqing half-closed his eyes. "Brother, your grandson hasn't been around for many years. It is just like you never have such a grandson. I guess it won't make any difference if you truly don't have a grandson afterward?"

Ye Shuqing started shaking. "What do you mean? Is this just your idea? Or is it the thought of you all?"

"Forefather heard that your grandson returned. He wanted to see the kid. I think he wants to intentionally raise the kid and train him to fit an important position in the clan if the kid is talented enough." Ye Shuxin looked vicious in the face. "Brother, if you were me, would you allow it?"

"Why wouldn't I? How could I not?" Ye Shuqing loudly answered, "Doesn't it mean Ye Clan is becoming stronger if the kid is stronger? Is it even necessary to hesitate?"

Ye Shuxin suddenly sneered. "That is why you don't fit the chair of the Chief. Your mind is always too weak. How can a weak-minded man become a decisive leader of a clan?"

...

Chapter 1082: Ye Xiao Showed Up

"I have been elaborately working for my current position for over a dozen years for myself and my children. If your grandson's return will destroy the bright future of my children..."

"There is nothing more to tell. I can't let that happen. I can't let the possibility exist!"

"As long as you promise to give me that little bastard, we can sort it all out. When our clan started to collapse, wasn't that bastard the cause of it?"

Ye Shuxin gritted his teeth and continued, "I can make a step back. Let him fight on the stage. Let him go to take some lotuses for the clan. If you have to protect him, I will have to destroy him today. I have to remove the person who leads to an internal dispute of our clan. I am honestly doing this for the sake of our clan."

"Think about it, this is the best choice you can make which will benefit everybody." Ye Shuxin seriously continued, "I assure you that I won't kill him. I will just put my figure on his dantian, and he will become a free man who doesn't need to contribute to anything but only to mind his own livelihood. He will enjoy the rest of his life in a leisure way. Isn't it a perfect condition for him?"

"It is the best I can offer. There is only one way to go. Brother, like it or not, you have to make a choice. If you don't, I will have to force you!" Ye Shuxin sighed helplessly/ "You can see the situation. If we start a fight, you will never win. Most importantly, Ye Clan will be damaged by the fight between us! You were once was the Chief, and you always devoted your humble heart to the clan. Is it bearable for you to see our clan falling and our people killing each other just for your own interests?"

Ye Shuqing was extremely pissed. "Humble heart? Devoted to the clan? These are the same words you used to force me off the chair! Today, are you going to hurt my children in the same way? Who is

the evil who only cares for his own interests?"

He laughed sadly and said, "Ye Shuxin, you asked if it is bearable for me to see this! Answer me, is your heart still a human heart?"

Ye Shuxin said, "Brother, I chose to do this for the sake of the clan. I have no regret!"

"Bullsh*t! Don't you regret the heartless sins that you commit?" Ye Shuqing shouted angrily, "Today, you don't get to hurt my children! Not unless you kill me first!"

"Brother, you have made your decision. There is nothing else to do. I may have to be disrespectful today." Ye Shuxin blandly smiled. Suddenly he waved his hand.

- Shoot! - On the wall of the yard, a row of archers appeared.

The arrows were shining in cold lights, aiming at the people who had stood in Ye Shuqing's side.

The men who were in the conflict all stopped and turned their head to see it. They were all shocked.

In fact, neither the men who stood on Ye Shuxin's side nor the other men who chose to support Ye Shuqing ever truly wanted to kill anybody. They had no reason to kill their own people just because they had different opinions.

The same situation had happened many times. The third group and the sixth group who were weaker usually submitted.

However, this time, somebody showed their weapons. It was going to be a battle of blood!

Ye Shuxin's people were holding their heads high, while people on Ye Shuqing's side all showed a gloomy face.

Nobody was stupid. They all knew... that Ye Shuixn had prepared to do this for a long time!

He might even want to make use of this conflict to drive away or wipe out all those who always stood against his will, to leave no

potential threats.

"Ye Shuqing and Ye Nantian are suspected of betrayal. They collaborated with people outside the clan to make disloyal plans. They want to destroy Ye Clan..." Ye Shuxin slowly spoke of some accusations that were entirely made up. The killing intent became stronger and stronger in his eyes.

The others all knew that the bloodshed would be started when he finished talking.

"Prepare for battle!" Ye Shuqing made a long sigh and waved a hand.

Apparently, he was utterly disappointed by his own clan.

Ye Nantian sneered. In fact, he was quite thrilled. He gradually raised his spiritual qi and prepared for the fight.

The other men who were on Ye Shuqing's side moved to a half-circulate defending array. Every one of them was holding the weapon, ready to kill.

The two groups had been fighting secretly against each other for nearly twenty years. Now, everything was but on the table.

"Ye Shuqing unscrupulously betrays the clan. Do you guys want to join him? Whoever realizes his mistake and mend his ways to kill Ye Shuqing can be spared and forgiven!" Ye Shuxin kept his hands behind the back, staring at the people in disdain.

It was all gloating in his eyes.

It was done!

He believed from now on, there would be no threat to him in Ye Clan!

He didn't care if there were outsiders waiting to destroy them. As the old saying said, to resist foreign aggression, there must be internal stability!

"Bullsh*t!" A man who stood beside Ye Nantian spat on the floor

and said, "Ye Shuxin, I regret that I have been calling you uncle for such a long time. Everybody knows what you are doing here! You just want to kill the ones who don't obey you. You are still spreading fallacies trying to deceive people. I would rather die than become a servant to a filthy dog like you!"

People burst into an uproar. None of them submitted to Ye Shuxin's power.

Ye Shuxin realized he had failed to alienate the opponents, so killing intent rose in his eyes. He slowly nodded and said, "Well! Good! Excellent!"

Then he shouted, "Guys, let's..."

"Wait, wait, wait... As the main character of this event, I haven't shown myself yet. Why are you guys rushing..." A clear voice sounded with laughter, "Oh hell. Really? Such a trivial matter? You just want me to do something for the clan. Am I right? Does it really have to become chaos like this? Should I call this a fuss of you or ignorance of you? Besides, even if it is this important, there are lots of ways to solve it!"

And then a young man in white clothes trotted over from the guest room, speaking with a gasp, "I am coming... I am here. I am the most relevant person in this event. Don't fight, guys... It is not a big deal... How wrong could it be..."

People on both sides all twisted their lips when they saw this young man.

[Is this Ye Nantian's son?]

[Why does he sound like a stupid fool who had no consideration?]

[You are the core figure of this conflict, but it doesn't intrinsically have anything to do with you. Don't you understand?]

[Understand?]

"You are..." Ye Shuxin smiled when he saw Ye Xiao. [I can just

solve the problem on this kid and all threats will be gone. Why do I have to make such a big fight?]

...

Chapter 1083: I Am Awesome!

After all, Ye Shuqing's family had only one man of the latest generation.

If Ye Shuxin could stop the fight and suppress the force of Ye Shuqing. He could even make use of the people who used to be against him. What a perfect plan!

He wanted to talk to Ye Xiao nicely, but when he was just about to say something, he realized he didn't know Ye Xiao's name yet.

"That's right. I am his son." Ye Xiao nodded and spoke with an innocent face, "Grandpa usually says that we are all family. We must solve problems in discussion... We can talk to each other and figure out solutions to all the problems together..."

As he said so, Ye Nantian's face turned dark, and Gramp Ye's face turned pale. Ye Shuqing's people also looked dark or pale in the faces. Nobody seemed normal!

Gramp Ye had been soft-minded. However, he decided to be tough today!

However, his grandson acted like a moron. Gramp Ye was an irresolute person, but his grandson seemed to be stupid. He wasn't like a fool; he was totally a fool!

Ye Xiao thought, [Erhuo, listen, I don't want to use your name either. This is such a coincidence!] [1]

Han Bingxue nearly laughed out loud in the guest room.

[Boss is messing around again.]

[Is he going to make this a big one?]

[This is a scenario of a family story. A killing scene can also be a scenario. Besides, the killing scene must be the main part of the story!]

When Ye Xiao stepped out the door, he was covered with killing

intent. His eyes had a sense of dangerousness. Han Bingxue figured he might not spare any of those men.

The question was how would he do it.

One thing was certain. Those men were all going to die!

"Kid, what's your name?" Ye Shuxin asked, in a friendly and nice tone.

"I am Ye Xiao." Ye Xiao giggled, "Ye Xiao, just the same name as Xiao Monarch. What a coincidence!"

[Xiao Monarch's name?]

Xiao Monarch had died a few years earlier, but when they heard his name again, they still felt the terror and coldness.

"Ye Xiao? Ye Xiao. Good name..." Ye Shuxin felt that his name was like burning charcoal. When he spoke the name, he actually felt burning in the mouth. So he cursed in his mind, [What a stupid name... Do the super influential figure's name save you from the misfortune?]

[You bloody bastard!]

[Only because of his name, he can never achieve any greatness in his life!]

"Kid, now you are back to Ye Clan, which means you are a part of Ye Clan. You have to know as a member of Ye Clan, you not have only the rights to take the honor but also a responsibility to take on your shoulders!" Ye Shuxin blandly said like a senior member giving fatherly advice to a youngster.

No matter what, he seemed vigorous when he was teaching others.

Gramp Ye, Ye Shuqing, knew that Ye Shuxin was going to frame his grandson, so he was nervous and worried. He wanted to interrupt the conversation, but unexpectedly, Ye Nantian grabbed his hand and stopped him.

Ye Shuqing turned over to look at his son. [Your son is going to fall into his trap. Why can you, as his father, just stay here and watch? And you don't let me stop it? How about protecting your own men like you always do? Have you lost your voice now? You can't be like a coward!]

Ye Nantian just smiled and didn't say anything.

Who was Ye Nantian? He knew best about his son among these people. He knew that ye Xiao had a full stomach of wicked ideas. He had learned about it while in the Land of Han-Yang. He knew that not many people could surpass Ye Xiao on scheming.

To deal with Ye Shuxin was easy.

[Ye Shuxin and Ye Xiao, who knows which of them would be poisoned later?]

[Pah! It indeed will be Ye Shuxin, the old bastard!]

"Honor? Responsibility? Shoulder?" Ye Xiao kept his eyes wide open and looked innocent, "I know. As a member of Ye Clan who has been supported by the clan naturally has to contribute to the clan... It is a natural thing to do. We don't need to talk about it."

"You have such a clear mind. I can see the sincerity in your heart. I am comforted. I believe your grandfather is also pleased." Ye Shuxin felt so happy about it. [This guy seems to be stupid. I can quickly set him up by a few words. Ye Shuqing the old bastard is going to be quite pissed off this time, isn't he? Why doesn't he come over now? As long as he stands out to stop this, I can accuse him of preventing a member of the clan from contributing to the clan!]

"Our clan is in a very critical time. It is urgent..." Ye Shuxing showed a solemn face and said, "You are the prior grandson of our clan. There are things that you can't reject. The fights we are going to attend to get the Regeneration Ink Lotus are the opportunities for you to make your contribution..."

In fact, Ye Xiao still felt weird about something, as they were talking about Regeneration Ink Lotus.

When he led those people from Ye Clan and Li Clan to enter Mountain of All Medicines, he didn't put on a disguise. He was showing the same face at the moment, but nobody recognized him. Wasn't it weird?

Although it was good that nobody recognized him so that he could keep proceeding the plan, he still felt weird!

When he looked around and found Ye Lianchen, Ye Meijing, and Ye Naihe... he realized the three of them were the only people who had seen his face...

The others including Ye Shangxin were absent...

At the moment, the three young men who were staring at Ye Xiao nearly shouted out. Ye Meijing already opened his mouth, wanting to shout, but he was covered by Ye Lianchen on the mouth. Ye Meijing could only make some awkward sound behind the hand.

"The lotuses concern the future of our clan. We must fight for it," Ye Xiao solemnly said.

"That's right. However, we don't have many people who can truly go up to the arena stage. We don't have enough strong competitive strength." Ye Shuxin thought that Ye Xiao was easy to be set up, so he casually went on with the plot.

"There is me! I can fight a couple of times on the stage of Regeneration Ink Lotus!" Ye Xiao clapped on the chest and said, "I will go! I will get enough lotuses back! I promise!"

"Oh? Are you really confident?" Ye Shuxin didn't believe it, "What level are you in?"

"Me?" Ye Xiao replied in confusion, "What... What level do you mean?"

The others were all speechless.

"I don't know about any cultivation level. However, I was born with immense strength. When I was in the lower realm, none of my father's soldiers could defeat me..." Ye Xiao frankly said.

...

—————

[1] The word Erhuo means a fool.

Chapter 1084: Give It A Try

Technically, Ye Xiao wasn't lying. Who dared to say he didn't have enormous strength?

Nobody!

Who dared to say Ye Nantian's soldiers could defeat Ye Xiao?

No one!

Generally speaking, Ye Xiao was undoubtedly aware of his own cultivation level, but he had East-rising Purple Qi, which was in a beginner level. He honestly didn't know what level he exactly was!

So... it seemed he didn't lie!

Since he didn't lie, then what he said must be the truth!

Ye Shuxin looked at Ye Xiao from head to toe and sensed the qi and blood running in his body. He reckoned Ye Xiao must be level five or six of Spirit Origin Stage. He felt relieved.

Ye Shuxin was only level seven of Dream Origin Stage. For Ye Xiao, it was pretty easy to hide his exact level and give Ye Shuxin the fake information.

Ye Shuxin thought that he apparently knew Ye Xiao's level, so he was relaxed. He spoke in a deep voice, "Well... You said you don't know your cultivation level. Hmm. That's a problem. I can't let you take the risk... I have an idea. Ye Zifeng, come. Start a casual fight against your little brother. Let's see if he is qualified to attend the arena."

Ye Zifeng was Ye Shuxin's third grandson. He was young, but already in level one of Dream Origin Stage. He was an elite among the youngest generation. According to his achievement in cultivation at his age, he was considered a genius.

He heard his grandfather's order and couldn't wait to jump out. His eyes were full of fierce glow. "Ye Xiao, my brother, come. We

are the same age. Let's get a few movements and let them see in what level you are..."

Ye Xiao hurriedly stepped back and said, "Is this alright? I can't control myself well. I always lose control in my fists... What if I accidentally hurt you or even kill you... We are family. Forget it..."

The others were didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

[You? With your middle-level Spirit Origin Stage capability? You actually think you could hurt a Dream Origin Stage cultivator?]

[There is a one stage gap ahead of you, dude!]

[This is... awkward.]

"Don't mind that. It is the most normal thing for cultivators to have a friendly fight. Even if you accidentally hurt Zifeng, you will be forgiven." Ye Shuxin laughed and said, "Oh, by the way, Zifeng, you must be careful. Do not hurt your little brother there. You have just reached Dream Origin Stage, which means you are unstable yet. Be careful not to make any reckless injury."

Everybody understood what he was doing. He wasn't asking Ye Zifeng to do it leniently at all. He was asking him to seize the opportunity to kill Ye Xiao!

However, people all felt weird at the same time. [Why are Ye Nantian and Ye Shuqing still silent about this? Are they still pretending? Do they want to see their kid get killed?]

Ye Shuqing couldn't bear it anymore. He was going to attack, but Ye Nantian stopped him again.

"What are you doing?" Ye Shuqing stared at Ye Nantian angrily, "You coward! Let go of me!"

Ye Nantian talked to him in mind connection, "The kid is fooling them... Do you remember what I told you? When he ascended to Qing-Yun Realm, he was far beyond level five of Spirit Origin Stage. Now it is one year after, do you think it is possible that he is

still at the same level?"

Ye Shuqing was shocked. "Weren't you kidding me? Are you telling the truth?"

"Holy hell! You thought I was only amusing you old couple? How would I let him live out there alone if he doesn't have the strength?" Ye Nantian speechlessly looked at his father. "If you go out and fight, we will ruin a great play..."

Ye Shuqing immediately felt relieved. He grabbed his own beard and still felt shocked. [Is my grandson indeed that awesome?]

In the yard, Ye Xiao had made the promise. "I feel relaxed since you said so. You know, it happens to get injured when you lose a fight. All cultivators got injured in a fight! It's a daily occurrence. Even if someone is killed in a fight, only himself or herself should be blamed. It's one's fate."

Ye Zifeng's eyes lit up. He laughed loudly and said, "That's true. If I died in your hands, I should be blamed because I am too weak to stay alive. Well, we always have such a rule for the combats between our own people..."

The others started to scold in mind. [What? Since when do we have such a rule?]

Before anybody said something against it, Ye Xiao responded with admiration, "We do? What a great clan we are! He who survives deserves to live. Because of this nature's law, Ye Clan has been growing stronger. We should keep the better and abandon the worse..."

People all became speechless.

They never thought that Ye Nantian, such a brilliant man, had such a stupid son. The old saying was right. Great father, foolish son...

"Come on!"

Ye Zifeng made a preparation posture.

Ye Xiao moved back two steps and spoke in a low voice, "I don't think it is a good idea to make an attack first. I had a second thought of it, and I don't think it will end up well for me if I kill you in this fight. How about this, you attack first. I will defend three strikes from you as a start."

People all closed their eyes. [This kid is utterly foolish. Doesn't he realize how much stronger his rival is? He actually nagged about defending three strikes from the other guy's first...]

[He doesn't only want to die... He is actually asking to die fast!]

Ye Zifeng was delighted when he heard that. He wouldn't show any humility. "Brother Ye Xiao, I appreciate your thoughtfulness. Here I come!"

He then thrust up into the air and rushed over to Ye Xiao with the sound of wind blowing.

On a side, Ye Shuxin watched the fight with a smile in the face, but a sense of coldness was hidden deep in his eyes. [As long as my genius grandson kills that stupid, arrogant bastard, the war will be started...]

[The little bastard asked for death on his own. Nobody is to be blamed!]

"Good move!" Ye Xiao didn't move away. He just stepped forward to face the attack.

Ye Zifeng looked fierce and vicious in the eyes. He made a shout and gathered all the power he could perform in his right hand.

At this critical moment, if he failed to hit Ye Xiao, somebody might interrupt the fight.

He wouldn't let that happen. [Since you want to die so much, let me do it for you!]

Opposite to him, Ye Xiao raised up his pale right hand. It looked

soft and weak as if he had no power at all. He did not even look close to having an enormous strength as he claimed earlier.

Ye Zifeng's heart was full of murderous intent! He fiercely stroke down the right hand!

"Oh, this is stunning!" Ye Xiao exclaimed.

At that moment, almost all the others held their breath at the same time. A few people who had been supporting Ye Shuqing had closed their eyes. They couldn't endure watching it. [Is the poor kid going to end his miserable life just like that?]

...

Chapter 1085: What Is Going On?

Everybody sighed.

[The kid Ye Xiao... is too piteous.]

[He has been living outside the clan for over a dozen years. He has just come home and stayed for only one night. Is he going to be beaten to death just like this?]

There appeared a sound of 'crack' in the yard. After that, it sounded a few more times. It was a series of bone-cracking sound.

That sound made people feel sour in the teeth. It was a sound of ruthlessness and bloodiness.

They were surprised. [Is it finished?]

[One strike and it is done?]

Those who had kept their eyes close now opened their eyes and got shocked by what they saw.

In the yard, Ye Xiao was still standing there with a full face of confusion...

On the opposite... Ye Zifeng was gone. On the floor, there was a pile of minced flesh...

Literally a pile of minced flesh.

After the harsh crash, Ye Zifeng was not only thoroughly dead but also physically broken into pieces. His body couldn't stand up or remain in human-shape. All that was left of him was a pile of flesh.

Unlike those who had closed their eyes, the others all saw it happen vividly. When the two hands touched, Ye Zifeng's hand broke into pieces immediately. In fact, the fight was ended at that moment. However, Ye Xiao seemed unable to stop his power. His hand still went down as he had been moving it.

Thus, after Ye Zifeng's hand broke, his arm broke, so did his shoulder, and it was not the end... The hand struck deep into Ye Zifeng's chest. His chest was, as expected, broken down...

After that, with another sound of a crack, the impact from the palm strike went from Ye Zifeng's chest to every bone of his body. All bones were cracked into pieces instantly!

The over one hundred people who witnessed it all got shocked, astonished at the same time. They couldn't believe it. They didn't dare to believe it.

[What... What's going on?]

After a while, a heartbreaking exclamation yelled, "You bastard! You! You... You killed my grandson..."

Ye Xiao answered alarmedly, "What... What happened... I didn't really put forth my strength... I thought it must be a pretty powerful strike he was making on me as it sounded so overwhelming... I just closed my eyes and tried to stop it with my hand... And how did he just die? What was going on?"

He looked confused as if he had no idea what had happened.

Ye Nantian almost laughed out loud.

He never found out that his son was such a talented actor!

If Song Jue were here, he would show disdainfulness to him. [You are just being ignorant about it. You didn't see the excellent acting your son played... Not only can he act like others would 'accidentally' become a pile of flesh, but he could also play as a pile of meat himself...]

There are some chapters about how he pretended to be a pile of flesh... Which chapters...

"Guys! Kill him!" Ye Shuxin had lost his mind.

"Hmm? What did you say? Kill me? Why?" Ye Xiao shouted, "We had an agreement! We both agree that there will always be

accidents in a fight, don't we? It doesn't matter if somebody dies in the accident! Why did you tell them to kill me? Aren't you the leader of Ye Clan? How could you go against your own words? Where is the dignity of a Clan Chief? You..."

Ye Xiao was so angry that his face turned red. He pointed at Ye Shuxin and continued, "... Can you at least be reasonable? You filthy, ugly, vile, dishonest..."

The others were all shocked.

[You have made his grandson a pile of flesh. There is not even a complete bone of the kid left. How can you accuse him of being unreasonable and dishonest...]

However, the problem was, they did have an agreement before the fight.

Ye Shuxin gritted his teeth and said, "Guys! Kill him! Kill him! Kill him! Ahhh..."

However, no matter how he shouted, nobody moved. The archers on top of the wall seemed to freeze. None of them moved even a bit.

The others all turned to the wall and looked at the archers. They were all surprised. [What is going on?]

[Why don't they follow orders now?]

Ye Xiao looked confused too. He raised up his head and looked at the men on top of the wall. Suddenly, he jumped up to the wall himself.

"Watch out!"

"Get down!"

Ye Nantian and Ye Shuqing shouted at the same time.

One or two archers couldn't make a threat to a cultivator. However, a team of well-trained archers was a different story. Even Dream Origin Stage cultivators might not be able to survive

it. What Ye Xiao did was basically reckless and dangerous.

However, Ye Xiao ignored his father and grandfather. He walked to an archer and slightly pushed the archer with a finger, "Your Chief asked you to kill me. Why don't you move? Didn't you hear him? Or did you pretend you didn't? Are you stupid?"

As his finger touched the archer, the archer suddenly fell off the wall. - Puff! - He hit the floor, and his head was parted from the neck.

The head was rolling away.

It was like a ball rolling on the floor for dozens of meters.

It was an astonishing scene to everybody. However, as they thought deeper about it, they felt even more terrified. The cut on the neck was so smooth that there was no blood coming out as if it were a... wax statue.

Those who saw the cut froze at the same time. All they felt was the terror. [What... What is going on?]

[Why are things so unbelievable as if it were a dream today?]

[The boy Ye Xiao killed the elite of the young generation Ye Zifeng by smacking him into a pile of flesh. The archers who have been waiting on top of the wall suddenly didn't move... One of them fell down off the wall, and his head rolled away from the neck, and the cut on the neck is so smooth that no blood splashed out... This is so... indescribable!]

There was no word to describe the misery!

Ye Xiao suddenly exclaimed on top of the wall as if he was frightened. "Ah! What is going on? Why is this so weird?"

The others were all lost in the astonishing and scary scene, but when Ye Xiao exclaimed, they all wanted to spit blood. [You know the best about what is happening! Yet you asked why? Who is supposed to know the answer...]

Ye Xiao continued going forward to another archer and touched the second one, "Why don't you move either? Are you dead too?"

- Puff! -

Another archer fell off the wall, whose head rolled away far.

That was totally a duplicate!

Hmm, those were all falling duplicates!

- Puff! -

Another fell down!

One more...

Another...

...

Chapter 1086: How About We Kill Them All?

The men motionlessly watched Ye Xiao moving from one side to another, pushing over one hundred archers off the wall one by one. The heads of the archers were rolling on the ground like a full cart of watermelons fell to the floor...

If only one or a few men died, it would be okay because all the Ye Clan people who were present had experienced killing. Some of them had even killed more than a hundred in total. However, when they were watching this scene, they all felt terrified.

What happened was too horrible! Too bloody!

Well, not bloody! There was no blood at all!

However, that made it much more horrible!

The archers had been waiting for the order on top of the wall. All their arrows were prepared. However, when they were standing by, somebody assassinated them in the same simple method—decapitation.

However, it was not a simple way to die!

All the archers were in the same posture as they were alive, with their bows and arrows in the hands.

Nothing changed.

What cruelly happened remained hidden until Ye Xiao went to push them.

Nobody noticed it before he did!

When their heads fell off their necks, there was still no blood!

When did he do it?

Nobody knew when or how he killed the archers!

When the archers died, their qi in the body remained running, so did their blood. They were beheaded but still standing fiercely...

None of them fell down.

Such a weird truth was beyond their recognition. Nobody understood it.

In fact, since they couldn't understand it, they felt more terrified by it because human instinct feared the unknown the most. They all felt cold on their backs as if they were in a living hell...

The person who felt most terrified should be Ye Shuxin. He was cold from head to toe, trembling. In his eyes, there was despair. He didn't understand why such a weird thing would happen!

Looking at the dead bodies on the ground, he staggered. He was dazed, and he didn't know what to do.

On the other side, Ye Xiao, after pushing all those archers off the wall, jumped off the wall and looked innocent. He scratched his head and said, "Are these statues? Are they used to scare people... Heh, heh, heh... It scared the sh*t out of me... We Ye Clan people are indeed good at joking. We must have lots of capable men. Look at the statues. They are just like real men. The head and the body... Just like human bodies. I thought they were human! Impressive..."

The others all twisted their eyes and the muscles in their faces.

[Statues?]

[Do you think statues could be so lively?]

Even Ye Shuqing, Gramp Ye, was struck by the crazy and overwhelming thing his grandson had just done. He kept his eyes open for a long time without saying a word. After a while, he turned to his son and asked, "Nantian... That... What was that? Did you know what would happen all the time? Do you know how he did it?"

Ye Nantian was stunned too. He was almost lost in thoughts, and he said, "You are flattering me... I... I am lost too... When did he become so capable?"

"I see. I know. This is a joke. We are a great clan indeed. Big budget, big production, big effect! Let's call this an end now, guys."

Ye Xiao slowly walked over with a big smile, "We are family. It is fine to just make a joke on our own man. It is indeed a little bit wayward and annoying, but the sun will come up tomorrow; the wind will cool down tomorrow. The world will still be a good world..."

The others were all embarrassed. [The sun will come up for you, so will the wind. But these guys on the floor who have lost their heads... the sun will never rise upon them again... nor will the wind...]

On the other side, Ye Shuxin, who had been numbly standing there, finally became sober. He furiously stared at Ye Xiao. "Little bastard... Look what you have done..."

Ye Xiao suddenly frowned, and his face turned cold and murderous. When the others were all feeling dazed, he appeared in front of Ye Shuxin in a way nobody noticed. He casually lifted his hand, and it smacked Ye Shuxin right on the face. "You vile, shameless, filthy old f*cking dog! How dare you abuse me?"

Under all the men's watch, Ye Shuxin, who was in a high level of Dream Origin Stage, actually didn't dodge the smack. He was firmly slapped on the face.

His head moved to the left, and he spat out a few white teeth with blood and saliva.

It all turned silent! Even the drop of a pin could be heard from the silence!

Everybody was shocked and also couldn't believe what they just saw!

In such circumstances, Ye Xiao casually and effortlessly hit Ye Shuxin in a humiliating way. How powerful was he? What level was he in?

All those men felt cold and started to tremble when thinking of it!

"I hate it when people try to abuse me!" Ye Xiao shook his hand, looked angry, and showed killing intent in his eyes.

Ye Shuxin was shocked and then angrily cursed after he regained consciousness, "You little bastard! How dare you smack me... How dare y..."

Before he finished, Ye Xiao had approached again.

"You went against your own words. Yet you dare to scold me!" Ye Xiao shouted at him and then smacked him again.

- Pah! -

"Abuse me again if you dare! You filthy, rascal, paltry f*cking sh*thead!"

- Pah, pah, pah, pah... -

A series of smacks hit on Ye Shuxin's face.

After a while, this Ye Clan Chief had become a pighead.

What terrified the others was that... Ye Shuxin wasn't restrained on any aspect, however, he was unable to get away from a single one of the smacks... It even felt like he was reaching his right face to Ye Xiao after being smacked on the left!

One smacked, the other got hit. Perfect!

That was exactly Zhou Yu beating Huang Gai [1], which means one is willing to beat, while the other is willing to get beaten. However, they were going too much further than Zhou and Huang's story!

Ye Shuxin couldn't speak out loud, but he kept gritting his teeth and staring at Ye Xiao.

"Oh, I almost forgot. You said you wanted to kill me!" Ye Xiao smacked him one more time. Ye Shuxin's body immediately

started to spin until it fell down to the floor after over dozens of rounds.

"Are this old dog's men all here today?" Ye Xiao suddenly turned to Ye Nantian and asked, "I think he got all his people here, right?"

Ye Nantian opened his mouth and showed his teeth, "I suppose so..."

"Well... How about we kill them all?" Ye Xiao asked in an extremely humble tone, "It should be... It should be okay, right? Is it okay?"

He wanted to kill them all...

What he said terrified them all!

...

[1] A story in the ancient Chinese novel, Romance of the Three Kingdoms.

Chapter 1087: Real Massacre!

The people were all shocked as if they had been struck by lightning on the head.

[The guy looks like an idiot, yet he is actually so merciless and ruthless! How can he?]

[He is going to slaughter and wipe out the rivals completely, spare no one, and leave no potential threats!]

"Apparently, you all don't want to be the bad guy. Fine. I will be it. I just came home yesterday. I don't even know who they are. It won't put any burden on my mind." Ye Xiao said, "Instead of making troubles for you, I prefer taking all the sins on myself!"

"No... No..." Ye Shuqing didn't even start to talk when Ye Xiao waved both his hands to make many dots of cold lights rushing forward in the air.

Ye Xiao's qi combined with Han Bingxue's and locked those men up secretly a while earlier!

Ye Xiao had made up his mind to kill them all since the beginning!

The men who stood in the opposition, he wouldn't want any of them to live!

Countless hidden weapons, including flying needles, flying knives...

Thrust out!

Ye Nantian, Ye Shuqing, and the men on their side were all stunned when they saw what happened!

Gramp Ye would have never thought that his grandson who had just returned was actually such a merciless person!

He actually started to slaughter without giving any signs!

He had just slowly pushed down the over one hundred men from the wall, yet now he started to kill the hundreds of people in his own clan!

No wonder he murmured before he did it, 'taking all the sins on myself'!

That was how he took the sins!

Gramp Ye was lost in thoughts. It reminded what Ye Nantian said to him earlier before. It was the same words!

Like father, like son.

After a few seconds, what filled people's sight were a mess of blood and dismembered bodies. The yard became like hell above the ground.

Those men who had been celebrating, thinking that they had occupied the upper position in this event, no matter what level they were in, all became corpses!

Five elders and the present Chief were included!

It meant after the massacre, eighty percent of the elites of Ye Clan were gone!

Even people who supported Gramp Ye felt weak in the legs and started to tremble after what happened. Ye Liangchen and the other youngsters were all trembling. Their legs were shaking like wet noodles. They nearly pissed in their own pants.

It was too scary!

Gramp Ye, Ye Shuqing, was pale on the face. He staggered, fell back down, and then passed out.

Although those men had been trying to kill their own family, although those men had always wanted him dead, although those men had come to proceed with their vile plan to kill his people...

When he saw those men all die... He couldn't accept it...

Especially when he saw Ye Shuxin become a human-shape hedgehog with all kinds of weapons sticking in his back...

He felt that Ye Shuxin was still staring at him.

After all, they were brothers. Gramp Ye was shocked by the sorrow, and he passed out.

Gramp Ye was not the only person who got shocked seriously. Even Ye Nantian, who had commanded an army of a million soldiers, who had seen lots of bloodshed in the battle, the great commander, the great general, was also pale on the face. The corners of his eyes were shaking. He was extremely shocked!

He had been wondering why his son came home in such a critical time. Now he knew that his son was home to make the massacre...

The critical time was coincidentally a perfect opportunity!

Even if those men didn't come to Ye Xiao today, he still wouldn't let go of any of those men!

Those men made use of an excuse to make trouble, but Ye Xiao made use of their excuse to hold the sword which started the massacre!

Because of it... he killed without psychological burden and guilt! He could slaughter wildly!

[You have enjoyed the slaughter indeed... but Ye Clan just lost so many people. Four groups are gone entirely. How do we face the crisis of all the other clans' suppression in the coming event?]

Ye Xiao didn't want to delay the massacre during the fight.

If he wanted to solve the problem inside Ye Clan, there were several ways to do it. Some took longer time, while others took shorter. Some would end with a happy ending for everybody, some would make him the dominator. Every way had its advantage. In the beginning, he thought maybe he should play schemes with those people. He was entirely free after all.

Wouldn't it be an exciting thing to do to kill time?

He had the absolute power that could overturn any situation. He thought he should cooperate with the men in Ye Clan to put on a great show! However, he only thought so in the beginning...

When he made that palm hit on Ye Zifeng, he suddenly felt that he was wasting time.

[I have absolutele overwhelming power! Why would I play schemes with you?]

[No matter how intelligent you are when you plot, you will all have to submit when my overwhelming power strikes down as a palm!]

[Ye Zifeng died. The rest of you will too!]

That was when he changed his mind to take the extreme way. He decided to attack and kill all the enemies at once!

He had no burdens in his heart at all.

Those men were all strangers to him. They were only a bunch of arrogant enemies who didn't know how weak they were. He felt nothing for them. He killed as he enjoyed it.

Besides, those men had been persecuting Ye Shuqing and Ye Nantian for many years. He felt that it was just revenge, and he had no negative feeling for it.

He just killed them all and felt clean and fresh!

That was what was called pleasure of the martial world!

He turned over and looked at Ye Nantian from time to time, with a peculiar expression in his eyes, like he was saying, 'Look, I have done what you should do but haven't done for many years within one day after I returned.' It was annoying.

Ye Nantian's twisting face turned pale. Then he eventually shouted, "Evil creature!"

Evil or not, he had to say something first, no matter how he really felt in the heart.

It was better him than Gramp Ye to do this... Ye Nantian knew his son's personality. He scolded Ye Xiao, and Ye Xiao would understand what he really meant. He would show Ye Nantian certain respect. However, if Gramp Ye scolded Ye Xiao, Ye Xiao might not show him the respect Gramp Ye needed. Ye Xiao had a different view from Gramp Ye after all. If Gramp Ye did it, the relation between the grandfather and grandson would become worse!

...

Chapter 1088: Ye Nantian's Lesson

"Why did you kill so many people? Who do you think you are? Do you still have respect for the senior people? Did you ask anybody for their own opinion?" Ye Nantian glared at Ye Xiao like he was furious.

It was such an artistic way to say those words. He actually scolded Ye Xiao for not asking their opinion beforehand!

Ye Xiao lowered his head and humbly admitted his fault, "I was wrong. I regret it..."

"You should at least tell us about the plan even if you insist on killing them, right?" Ye Nantian went on with anger, "Otherwise, how does it comfort the rest of us?"

Ye Xiao twisted his lips.

[That is such a lousy way to ease the atmosphere.]

People who were still standing in the yard were all on Ye Shuqing's side. They realized their clan had such a powerful man and felt more glad than astonished!

Although they could not have the heart to enjoy the death of those men, they also felt so relieved watching those bastards die. Those were two entirely different kinds of feelings in their hearts. However, that aside, they actually felt pleased that they had such a dominant figure in the clan after all!

What Ye Xiao did was far beyond these men's recognition. They didn't want to know how Ye Xiao did it. They just knew that even their forefather Ye Tianchen was never able to do it!

When they saw Ye Nantian scolding Ye Xiao, they all walked over, wanting to calm him down. Maybe they would do this because they wanted to approach Ye Xiao. They just didn't care if the father and son needed to calm down or not!

Before they did it, Ye Nantian suddenly spoke comfortably, "Do you know why you were wrong? It's good that you know it. It is always a good thing to correct one's error. Stand aside now. Let me take care of the aftermath. Look what a chaos you have made! I need to work hard to solve it."

The others nearly fainted.

[That's it?]

[I thought you were going to give him a harsh lesson when you spoke so solemnly. Fine. After he killed over a hundred people in our clan, you just forgave him by saying 'it is always a good thing to correct one's error'?]

[That can't be more perfunctory!]

[Can it?]

[It can't!]

An important word was always repeated three times!

They all looked at Ye Nantian with admiration in their eyes. [Your son is not the most audacious person. You are!]

[Besides, they are all killed... What aftermath do you need to do?]

[What do you want to deal with?]

[The corpses?]

[Do you want to destroy them? Burn them into ashes? Sweep every bit of them?]

"Ahem. Everybody come around. Let's have a quick discussion. Look how miserable it is..." Ye Nantian frowned and looked gloomy, "I am to be blamed. I raised up such an evil creature who does things in such an audacious way. He actually made such big trouble for us just the day after he comes home. However, there is nothing else to do. Those who died are dead. What we can do is to let it go. Guys, what do you think we should do next?"

"We are in a life and death situation in this critical time... We need to be bonded firmly to get through the crisis..."

Ye Nantian solemnly spoke, and then suddenly turned around to shout at Ye Xiao angrily, "You evil creature! Why are you still standing here? Go to your room and take some rest! Don't you feel tired standing here like a fool?"

The others were extraordinarily speechless and awkward at the moment!

[What did he just say?]

[Take some rest?]

[Do you think your son must be tired after killing all those people?]

[So you urged him to take a rest?]

[Take a rest...]

[You could just tell him to shut himself up and ponder over his mistakes or something like that!]

[How could you speak so boldly?]

[Isn't it too audacious?]

However, nobody dared to say it out.

They wished they could build a good relationship with Ye Nantian, Ye Shuqing, and Ye Xiao. None of them would accuse them of killing some men who were already dead. Besides, those dead men were enemies when they were alive. They wanted those men to die, and now they were killed. They couldn't defend them and turn against Ye Xiao! That would be cheap!

"That's right. The first thing should be cleaning the dead bodies. It is a trouble to pollute the environment by keeping them here."

"True. Those men's families should be well settled too. Otherwise, there will be more troubles coming."

"Exactly. Nantian is right. We are in a critical time. Rebuilding the Elders Congress is also important. All things should be done for the interests of our clan."

"I think the lightning massacre is somehow a good thing for our clan. Although it is ruthless, we will be the ones who died if the massacre happened later."

"That's right. I agree that Xiao Xiao is our savior."

"Besides! I think we should reward him. We can't waste the kid's talent!"

"Exactly! That is so true!"

"Ye Clan eventually returns to a whole. Today, we are back!"

"Yes! For the return of a united Ye Clan, it is worth sacrificing some people and shedding some blood!"

"That is totally true!"

"Let's go inside and have a meeting."

"What about the... new Chief?"

"What about the Chief? Why hesitate? Brother Ye Shuqing has always been the rightful Chief! Ye Shuxin merely took an evil way to take over the chair! Now the traitors are all dead! We should surely support Brother Shuqing to be our leader again!"

"Right! I support Brother Shuqing!"

"Brother Shuqing is the only person who is excellent in both martial art and personality! He should be our leader!"

"I agree!"

"Agree!"

"Agree with my hands and feet up!"

"My entire family votes yes!"

"Piss off! Have some dignity! You are a bachelor! What do you

mean your entire family? Where is your family? Are you all your family has, or are you representing the other members of your family?"

...

They started to organize themselves into different jobs after all the chitchat and laughter.

All their enemies were dead. They felt relieved and pleased when they were working on the aftermath.

The guards who came to help clean the bodies were all pale on the face. They had flushed the floor for many times with clean water. All the stains were gone except for the bloody smell still suffused the air.

Ye Liangchen was rolling his eyes. He slowly took out some bottles from inside his clothes. Those were bottles of fragrant powder that only ladies would use. He scattered it to the floor.

Suddenly, the fragrance filled their noses and covered the foul smell of blood.

Nobody knew he actually would take such a feminine thing with him...

Whoever saw it all looked weird on the face.

...

Chapter 1089: Have to Let It Out

Ye Liangchen's father saw what his son did, and he wasn't happy about it. In fact, he was so angry that his nose was twisted. He walked over, beat Ye Liangchen up really hard, and scolded, "You wasted trash! Can't you do something normal... Are you going to exasperate me to death with all these useless feminine things..."

Ye Liangchen made waves of exclamation that shocked the world...

...

Ye Xiao went back to the room as his father told him. He looked pretty calm and indifferent as he raised up the teacup of tea that was still warm and drank the tea up.

Han Bingxue twisted his lips and asked, "How was it? Did you feel good?"

"Just so-so." Ye Xiao sighed. "I didn't want to pretend. There was no other way to do it."

Han Bingxue thought for a while and nodded to agree. "That's true! Only to finish it swiftly can get it done once and for all."

"Let them rebuild their leadership on their own. You and me, we better have a drink." Ye Xiao sighed. "In fact, I didn't feel peaceful and calm as I expected during the massacre."

Han Bingxue nodded.

Ye Xiao had admitted to being a member of Ye Clan, so how could he feel nothing after killing over a hundred of his own people?

However, it was something he had to do, though he didn't really want to.

Ye Shuqing gradually woke up. The first thing he did when he woke up was to spit out a mouthful of blood.

He had been enduring those men for many years because he

wanted the clan to rise. Even though he and his family had been suffering the insults, he never fought back. In his mind, only the rise of the clan was essential to everybody...

However, he never thought that his grandson would kill all of the opponents in the clan when he met those people for the first time after he returned!

It was a wild slaughter! He literally killed every one of them without mercy!

Gramp Ye thought about that bloody scene in his sight before he passed out, and he felt difficult to breathe. [If we have to do this, I would have done it long ago! Why would I wait till the present? I would have fought against them even without forefather's support. I at least wouldn't need to endure their insults all these years. But... we are in the same clan. We are the same name. Do we really have to be so ruthless?]

However, after looking around the others, hearing their conversations, he slowly came to enlightenment. [I... maybe... I was wrong from the beginning!]

"Only to strike it in this thundering way can we firmly stand on the floor in the clan and have the right to let out our voice!" It was a junior brother of Gramp Ye talking.

"That's right. The foolish idea of stepping back again and again weakly, hoping they would spare us some certain rights would only make us fall to the bottom of desperation!" The man who said these was Ye Liangchen's father, Ye Nantian's cousin.

"True. Qing-Yun Realm is a world for the strong, not for the weak. Not only outside the clan, but also among the clans, even inside a clan, it is always the natural law!"

"Family bond... What is the family bond? Haven't we kept talking about the family bond to them all these years? What has been brought to us? They kept forcing us to the corner of nowhere!"

"It's right to kill them!"

"They deserved it!"

...

What Gramp Ye heard were all angry voices.

He was such an experienced man. He knew that these people who had been supporting him for many years were actually disappointed by his self-surrender.

"Guys, don't you have any different opinions about what happened today? Any different views?" Gramp Ye was lost. He actually asked a question that shouldn't be mentioned, a question a man like him should never ask.

"Different opinions? Different views?" The others all felt surprised. "No. We may feel a little grieved, but if we have to do it again, we would still applaud for it! To be honest, we never have that strength to do it. Otherwise, we would have done it long ago!"

"That's right!"

"Correct! Same here!"

"We have the same point!"

"Was I always wrong to step back to them, bearing their insults? Was it just my own dream to hope that they would become kind and united to us..." Gramp Ye murmured, "All the decisions I made, I made them for the clan. Was I wrong?"

"You were wrong!" An old man stood up. He was Ye Shuqing's closest blood-related brother, who looked eighty percent alike to Ye Shuqing, Ye Shuzhan.

"Second Brother, even you think so?" Ye Shuqing looked at his closest brother and couldn't believe what he just heard.

"Brother, I have some words that I have buried deep in my heart. I don't think I can hide it anymore. Today, I would like to seize the chance to let it out." Ye Shuzhan took a deep breath and said,

"Please forgive me if I offend you."

"Go ahead," Gramp Ye said in a daze.

Ye Shuzhan took a deep breath. His face gradually turned red.

Finally, he started talking...

As he spoke, he had been holding it in the heart for too many years. He couldn't bear it anymore. As he started, his words were let out like a river rolling on in the waves! Apparently, he was extremely emotional at the moment.

"Brother, why do you think we chose to support you? We chose you, not only because... you are nice, honest, honorable, profound, and powerful... but also something else. At least these are not all..."

Ye Shuzhan loudly said, "The main reason why we chose you is that we wanted our lives to become better and better under your lead!

"We wanted to be at least respected in this clan, though we couldn't hope for a position next to you. We wanted our voice to be respected!

"We wanted the opportunity to grow our rights and profits gradually!

"All in all, as a bunch of people who couldn't achieve great success on our own, why do you think we want to follow somebody? Why wouldn't we just enjoy our days? Why would we put ourselves under constraint?

"Because we wanted to do something that we can't succeed on our own, under the wise command of a mighty person!

"Brother, I know you don't like what I am saying. I know I may hurt you by saying it out." Ye Shuzhan stood straight up and spoke loudly, "I know you would consider my words as too realistic and snobbish, maybe cold-blooded.

"However, no matter what we wish for, it all depends on our

power!

"Humanity, loyalty, you name it. These only can be upheld by strong power!"

...

Chapter 1090: Outspoken

"Back to the days when you were leading the clan, we had nine groups, seven of which all supported you! No matter what decision you made, the entire clan endorses it!

"No matter how evilly ambitious Ye Shuxin was, if he dared to forcibly take over the Chief's chair without your permission, he would only get death!

"When he found fault with you and forced you off the chair for the sake of the clan, he was risking the lives of all the men in his group!

"However, he actually won the gamble that he was bound to lose!

"Because you stepped back without any discussion with any of us!

"Ye Shuxin had everything in his favor because he had the guts to gamble. He won. The power he got was the reward. If the kid Ye Xiao didn't do it today, we may all die in this place. Brother, you are always irresolute but caring for the family. Even when you got the upper hand, you wouldn't kill the opponent. What about Ye Shuxin? Since he decided to stand against you, he wouldn't show mercy to us!

"You are confused why we wouldn't mind Ye Xiao's viciousness. Have you ever thought about what would be our end if Ye Xiao didn't get himself involved? We would die in a much worse way than what happened to them! Ye Xiao was saving our lives! Why would we have different views against him?

"Sometimes, I feel it's too hard to understand your thoughts. Brother, just how do you see things?

"When you held the clan in your hands, you were profound, wise, dominant... Ye Clan was rising day by day under your lead...

"Did you completely lose your ambition just because of what happened to Nantian? All you have in mind is how sorry you are

and how much you owe the clan!

"You were decisive and strong, but at the same time, you are also weak and indecisive. Maybe in your mind, you think all you have done is for the sake of Ye Clan. Maybe you decided to ignore everything except the clan!

"Have you ever thought deeper about it? You feel guilty, so you step back. You feel ashamed, so you decided to bear the insults. What about us, who have been following you for all these years?

Ye Shuzhan looked emotional. "We have been supporting you with loyalty. When you gave up, we lost our backbone! We don't even have a person who can make decisions for us.

"That was when we became a state of disunity.

"Do you know why the second group and fourth group left for Ye Shuxin? They were angry and disappointed by your self-surrender! You failed them! You chilled their hearts down. The seventh group and ninth group have moved out. Nobody knows where they are now! Weren't they disappointed? They left for their survival!

"Six groups out of nine were left, yet we even fought against each other all these years. After today's massacre, we lost three groups!

"However, your self-surrender is what led to the current situation!

"You let Ye Shuxin win the combat that he was never meant to win. Your decision eventually killed three groups of the clan!

"I didn't have to be among the three groups that supported Ye Shuxin. The other three that supported you might die instead if not for Ye Xiao. Our groups might die! It was bound to be them or us. Ye Clan was bound to lose three groups today!

"Do you know how many of our talented children have lost their opportunity to get the cultivation resources they deserve all these years? They are all wasted now. Do you know how Ye Shuxin and his people, including their children, bullied our people?

"Do you know that we have lost patience to endure it anymore for a long time?

"Do you know that even when we were coming to get together, we were thinking... maybe it was better to die together today since there was no hope for us? Do you know we were having such thoughts when we came?

"No, you don't. How do you know? Nantian was expelled to the lower realm. Nanyang was dead. You almost never cared about anything else. You don't know!"

"Today's fight, if Xiao Xiao didn't put on such a lightning massacre and kill them instantly, it would be the tomb of us all here!

"However, because of Xiao Xiao, the desperate situation of us was changed!

"Xiao Xiao's marvelous cultivation and martial art were not the keys to the sudden turn of events! At least, it is not the most important thing!

"The most important thing is his cruelty! He killed when he had to! There was no hesitation!

"He did it just like all the people who achieved greatness!

"A man of great ambition does not bother about trifles!

"Ye Shuxin made use of your loyalty to the clan to win the fight he was meant to lose. Today, Xiao Xiao used the ruthlessness toward the clan to rewrite the result of the clan!

"We are excited, not only because we won our survival, or Xiao Xiao's incredible power, but also for the hope we regain from Xiao Xiao's cruelty!

"Ruthlessness!

"One who is weakhearted won't stand firmly on the ground of this world ruled by strength!

"A weakhearted and irresolute leader will never achieve greatness! Not to mention lead his men to a stronger and better future!

"We are still here supporting you, not because of the memory of the old days, or your power, but because you have this grandson, Xiao Xiao!

"We believe no matter what happens next, our clan will rise greatly! Our interests will be protected! We can even get more than what we want!

"When we rise, we rise under a brilliant leadership! When we reach the clouds, we fly with the wings you give us! Even if we meet a crisis that we won't survive, we die with a great leader!

"That's what we need!

"We need a head of the clan, not a man who surrenders! Not a man who endures! Not a head that leads us to suffering!

"We are just a clan in the martial world!"

...

The hall was in silence.

Everybody showed a solemn face while quietly listening to Ye Shuzhan's speech.

Ye Shuzhan coughed from time to time when he was excited. His face was all red.

What he said, he said it fast and robust like a rainstorm, but in a clear and steady enunciation. Apparently, these words had been practiced in Ye Shuzhan's heart for countless of times.

He had thought of saying it out many times, and because it was buried in his heart for a very long time, when he finally got the chance to let it out, he couldn't hold it back anymore. All the words he sincerely spoke were running out smoothly, in spite of what consequence it might lead to!

Chapter 1091: Restructure the Leadership of Ye Clan

Everybody started to sit still after hearing what Ye Shuzhan said.

That was right. Those were precisely the words they wanted to say!

Ye Shuzhan had spoken out the words in everybody's heart.

It was so silent that even the sound of a needle hitting the floor could be heard. Ye Shuzhan's gasp was the only thing sounding in the room.

Ye Shuqing looked upset and guilty, murmuring, "So... I was wrong... I was wrong from the moment I decided to give in. I hurt you, also myself. I put you into suffering, as well as myself. I even caused the death of the three groups that we lost today!"

"But it is not too late to start over again!"

Ye Nantian decisively said, "Without destruction, there can be no construction. Xiao Xiao's massacre was ruthless, but it bonded us together again. Ye Clan is pure now!"

"Everybody in Ye Clan is on our own side. There will be no evil minds among us!"

"We should rebuild our clan when we are all of one mind. We should rise again! Although we are greatly weakened after the massacre, and it seemed to be more difficult to solve the problem about the other clans, as long as we stick together and work with one mind, we are still the Ye Clan we used to be! We will become much stronger in the future!"

"Because nothing is stopping us inside the clan! This is the most important and precious thing we have earned today!"

"True!" The others all agreed in unison.

The old man, Ye Shuzhan, had finally vented it out. Now, however, he thought what he had said might have gone too far, so he lowered his head and said, "Brother, I have been suppressed too much these years. I may have said things exaggeratedly. It is not fair to keep mentioning what has passed in time... Don't keep those words in mind. I spoke it, and everyone heard it. That's the end."

Ye Shuqing's eyes were full of tears. He said in a trembling voice, "Things that have passed should not be chased, but how can I forget the sincere words of you..."

Ye Shuzhan's expression on his face changed. He suddenly kneeled down and kowtowed. "I was stupid to speak out those reckless words. I have rudely offended you, Brother! Please, I beg your punishment!"

No matter what wrong Ye Shuqing had done in the past, it didn't matter anymore, because he was the Chief of Ye Clan again. He even had strong support, Ye Xiao. In other words, if Ye Shuqing felt humiliated and make an accusation on Ye Shuzhan of disrespecting the chief, nobody had any reasons to disagree!

[I was wrong. So what? My grandson fought the clan back to our hands. Who is discontented? Step out and talk!]

In Qing-Yun Realm, power was the law!

Ye Shuzhan had vented it out freely but ignored the current situation.

The most horrible thing for the men who had just escaped death was to face death again!

Ye Shuqing made a long sigh and stood up. He held his brother up and said, "Brother, don't you forget what kind of person I am? I was simply being honest... Your words have enlightened me. What wrong is it? Come on, get up!"

Then he stood straight up, looked around, and talked to the people in a deep voice, "We should correct what is wrong and

accept what is right. There is nothing you can't say.

"However, I can't take the responsibility as the Chief of Ye Clan again."

The others were shocked to hear it. "Chief, please, give it a second thought! You can't give up on us."

"The mistake in the past is the teacher in the future. It is the best thing to correct one's error. You are awake now! Why give up on it?"

Ye Shuqing smiled and answered, "I understand what you think. I am not doing this because of that. I am not resigning because of guilt. I just... want to hand over the power to someone more capable!

"Guys, please join me at the Ancestors' Hall in the afternoon. Let's report to the Prime Elder that I will take the chair as Chief of the clan. After that, I will hand it over to Nantian! Then I will serve in the Elders' Congress as an elder.

"It should be a result that everybody is happy to see."

Gramp Ye continued, "It is decided. Please don't try to change my mind... Haha..." He laughed and said, "We are family. I know that you are relieved. This is exactly the best you can have... Don't pretend. Don't comfort me. I am fine. I am at least able to be this broad-minded..."

The others were stunned and then burst into waves of laughter. The room was full of joy.

Ye Nantian hurriedly said, "Father, I am afraid this isn't the best decision. You are healthy and strong. It is too early to... Besides, I am still a susceptible member of the clan. Maybe Qiong-Hua Palace will do something again at any time... If they know I will become the Chief, they may come to make trouble on Ye Clan. Then..."

"We can't chase the past, but we can learn from it. We have submitted once, and it led us to a painful sacrifice. We will not

submit again." Ye Shuqng blandly said, "I am afraid we may get used to surrendering if we step back again. If they come up again, we will just fight till the end. I would love to die fighting against them! What do you think?"

"Aye!"

The others all agreed.

The future of Ye Clan was eventually invulnerable!

...

When they were in the middle of the meeting, a voice casually sighed and said, "Do you really just make the decision now?"

The door of the room suddenly opened even though the wind didn't blow it.

A slim figure was standing at the door.

It was Ye Tianchen, the forefather of Ye Clan!

"Forefather!" The men all stood up and humbly saluted.

Ye Tianchen made a long sigh and walked into the room. He looked solemn and grieved.

Nobody dared to say anything. Even Ye Nantian, who had a strong and steady mindset, didn't dare to make a reckless sound.

Ye Tianchen stopped and stood for a while, then looked around while speaking, "I have seen the... bodies..."

He paused for a while and continued, "You have done... well!"

"Thank you, forefather!" the men answered together.

They knew the truth. They knew it wasn't sincere praise. However, as things had come so far, even the forefather had to admit it.

It was the only way the clan could choose.

Ye Clan only had three groups that were led by Ye Shuqing and

Ye Nantian. Ye Tianchen couldn't give a death penalty to them, could he?

To kill more?

There were not many left to be killed anymore!

In fact, Ye Shuxin dared to kill the other three groups at the beginning because he knew Ye Tianchen couldn't punish him after he did it!

But even though things went against his plan, Ye Tianchen was still in the same trouble. The only difference was that the other three groups died instead!

...

Chapter 1092: All Settled

Ye Tianchen looked at the men in the room with an utterly complex expression in the eyes. "Nantian, your son... What level is he in now?"

Ye Nantian was surprised. He said, "Well... I... I didn't have time to ask him..."

Ye Tianchen was shocked. [Didn't ask? Do you need him to tell you? He killed lots of people in the fight, yet none of you saw his cultivation capability? Even though he is quite strong and maybe you can't tell his level, you can have a rough estimation, can't you? After all, he is young. There must be a limit to a young man like him? What? Does he have such incredible power?]

At the moment, among the crowd, an excited voice sounded, "Forefather! Uncle Nantian's son is the young man who led Li Clan people and us into the mountain! We are not just the same name! We are the same clan..."

It was Ye Liangchen speaking.

He was the weakest and youngest among the people in the room. When he scattered the powder out in the yard, he was driven away to guard the door by his father. He didn't notice Ye Tianchen because the old man was too powerful. When he heard the noise in the room, he hurriedly ran over.

Ye Liangchen was one of the people who knew who Ye Xiao truly was. He had held it down in his heart for such a long time. Now, he finally got the chance to tell the truth!

"Is it him?"

Ye Tianchen looked weird in the eyes. Suddenly, he felt relieved and said, "Of course it is him. I am relieved. Ye Clan will be safe from now on..."

Like Ye Liangchen, Ye Tianchen also remembered the lady in

black and the man in white clothes... They still remembered the incredible power of the two figures...

There was nothing to worry about Ye Clan anymore since Ye Xiao was a member of them!

The lady and the other man were beyond Ye Tianchen's recognition. It was a good thing for Ye Clan. It meant the two of them were so powerful that even a Dao Origin Stage cultivator couldn't see through them. Also if Qiong-Hua Palace wanted to attack them, it wouldn't be so easy. Qiong-Hua Palace would have to reconsider it carefully!

That was why Ye Tianchen believed Ye Clan was safe. He didn't mean only safe from the current crisis, but also in the future! All in all, Ye Clan was free from troubles!

Since Ye Clan was free from troubles, the other clans would be different!

"I guess I should go back and continue to recover." Ye Tianchen laughed and said. He finally put down all the burden in his heart. He gazed around and started to leave. "You guys go on to talk about the combats in the arena. No need to inform me of any decision... Haha... I am off."

"Forefather, don't you want to see the kid? He is our elite! An extraordinary kid!" somebody asked.

"It's better not to see him. Never mind. He is always Ye Clan's child after all!" Ye Tianchen laughed and left casually, disappearing within a second.

For Ye Tianchen, it might not be a good thing to see Ye Xiao. If he saw Ye Xiao, he would have a problem with his position. Although he was a senior member of the clan, Ye Xiao might still ignore him since he wasn't powerful enough to put on airs in front of Ye Xiao. He could only do it to the other members. In truth, he was just a weak trash in front of Ye Xiao. He wouldn't feel privileged in front

of Ye Xiao, not to mention he might even need to be careful of his words. After all, the two persons who were beside Ye Xiao could do significant damage by just a blink. That was why it was better not to see him!

After the bloodshed, everything in Ye Clan was settled. It was time to start a new era.

...

The next day was a busy day for everybody in Ye Clan.

Exclamation and cries resounded in many yards of Ye Clan.

Those were families of those who died...

At the same time, the news had spread out.

"Ye Nantian's son returns overwhelmingly. A young powerful cultivator, peerless in the world, killed every single one of the people who stood against him in Ye Clan on the first day."

"Is it for real?"

"How is it fake? Don't you see Ye Clan people are holding funerals?"

"Holy hell! Ye Nantian's son? Is he really so ruthless? He did it to his own people? People in his own clan?"

"That's true. It was unexpected!"

"Right, I heard he is exactly the son of Ye Nantian and the Saintess of Qiong-Hua Palace, isn't he?"

"Yes, he is."

"Like father like son. Ye Nantian was known as a genius when he was young. There was nobody in his generation that could surpass him. His son is just like him, only much better..."

"That is true. However, he may be too vicious. Slaughtering lots of people of his own clan without hesitation... It's just..."

"To resist foreign aggression, there must be internal stability. It

is a necessary process a young man of a clan has to get through. It always comes with blood and flesh. Wait, do you know the young man's name?"

"Urh... Ye... Ye Xiao?"

"Ye Xiao?"

"Yes."

"The same with Xiao Monarch? Xiao as in 'laugh at the world'?"

"I think so. It's the same."

"So it is. Gosh. He is named after such a man. He is bound to be someone extraordinary... I guess this Lord Ye will eventually become a peerless figure, who may not be worse than Xiao Monarch."

"Considering what he has done, I am afraid so..."

The news spread to the other clans'

People in those clans were all shocked.

"Ye Shuxin died?"

"Gone just like that?"

"Over half of Ye Clan's elites died? Doesn't it mean that they are greatly weakened?"

"This is great..."

"Not really. It is said that the young man Ye Xiao is a ruthless and overwhelming figure. He attacks when he feels annoyed. He actually killed every single one of his opponents within an utterly short period of time. All killed! No hesitation! It was incredible..."

"Holy hell! Is he truly that powerful..."

"It's true!"

"No matter what, we are going to see the guy on the stage in the afternoon."

"If he really is that powerful, our men will be in danger!"

"Not necessarily. After all, Ye Clan has no really powerful cultivators except Ye Tianchen. The best of their youngest generation is only in level one of Dream Origin Stage. I guess that Ye Xiao may not be very powerful!"

"That's right."

"Anyway, whether he is a dragon or a bacon, we have to fight him. We can't back off just because of what they say about him, can we?"

"That's true."

...

Chapter 1093: Show Up

At an altitude of Town of Ye.

It was a small basin that was surrounded by four hills.

It was an artificial area.

The hillsides looked normal in the first gaze, but they were actually structured with many layers of seats. The seats were organized neatly. There were even passages between different sections. What a creative ingenuity.

On the lowest part was a round-shaped stage, which was only about sixty meters wide. It was spacious enough for a one-on-one battle.

There were three seats on each of the four sides. Those were seats for judges. The fight could be watched from different perspectives.

The hillsides were full of people.

The youngsters from different clans were sitting around the stage, vigorously and quietly. They were waiting for battle.

As the clans promised, every clan could only send ten people to attend the battle.

In other words, if the ten young men of a clan were all defeated, the clan was out. The clan that won a fight had the chance to go on for further combats. That meant whoever was powerful enough could go on to fight more until all the other clans were out! The winner won the rest of the lotuses!

The young men of each clan were all confident. To be chosen to attend such a significant event, they must be the leaders of their generation, a bunch of talented genius. They were all imagining how they would win more and more lotuses for their own clans so that they could get higher positions in the clan.

It was such an important opportunity. They would have to spend

months and years to raise themselves to higher positions in the clan if they couldn't attend this arena...

Today, it was going to be an opportunity for some of them to become famous in the clan and in the district!

They couldn't miss it!

Li Clan people resided near the stage, so they got to choose an area closest to the stage. Ye Clan was beside Li Clan. What a coincidence...

At the moment, the entire area was full of people. However, Ye Clan's seats were mostly empty.

That was the reason why the others all kept looking over. They heard there was a misfortune that happened in Ye Clan, and many of their people died... They wondered who would lead Ye Clan's people.

The crowd was honestly impatient. If Ye Clan didn't have most of the high-quality lotuses, people would have burst into chaos. A few clan's leadership were discussing whether they should send people to Ye Clan to urge their men to the arena. Finally, somebody excitedly said...

"Here they are..."

"Ye Clan people are coming..."

Suddenly, everybody turned in the same direction.

On the broad road which led to the stage, Ye Clan people were moving slowly in a neat formation.

The man who led the formation was tall and strong with a square and handsome face. He looked vigorous while striding on the road. Behind him, there were only about forty men. However, it felt like he was leading an army of a million men and they were ready to assault. It gave everybody the feeling of a force that could sweep away millions of enemy troops!

That was exactly dragon's vigor, tiger's prestige!

The other people of Ye Clan were walking alongside the formation. However, they were less than the other clans remembered. Many of them were unacquainted. Most importantly, Ye Tianchen was not with them!

The other clans all felt pleased to see that.

Ye Tianchen was Ye Clan's main force. He was the best among all the superior cultivators of all the clans. That was why the other clans kept pushing Ye Clan but never dared to push them too hard. They didn't want Ye Tianchen to run wild. If Ye Tianchen made a suicide attack, say a self-explosion attack, he would definitely kill one or two best cultivators of a clan. Ye Clan might be collapsed, but the other clan would fall with them. The two clans would be swallowed by the other clans immediately!

The arena for Regeneration Ink Lotus was exactly a compromise that the other clans made because of Ye Tianchen!

Now, the other clans didn't see Ye Tianchen coming, so they all felt overjoyed. They couldn't help but imagine how Ye Tianchen was injured in the fight for the leadership! [It would be great if he got injured by his own people! Without Ye Tianchen, Ye Clan is just a piece of dead meat on the plate, a newly born child in hand! We can do whatever we want to Ye Clan!]

Behind Ye Nantian, there were eight young men who were all unacquainted to the other clans.

However, they were walking excitedly, vigorously, and energetically. They just didn't seem good in cultivation.

People of the other clans didn't know the cultivation statuses of those young men, but they were sure these young men were all below Dream Origin Stage. They didn't understand why the young men were so excited. It was a severe battle after all. There was no limitation on the stage. It was very possible that some of them

would die on the stage.

Among the young men, the one who walked behind the row had drawn everybody's attention. He was tall and handsome, wearing white clothes, walking casually like a breeze of wind. What a pretty young lord.

"The young men are all unacquainted. But most of them fit the information we collected about the young generation of Ye Clan. That one who has the prettiest face and walking behind the row, is he Ye Nantian's son who has recently returned?"

"Handsome guy indeed!"

Many young ladies burst into excitement.

"Oh... So handsome..."

"So charming... He is the Mister Right in my dream... The only one..."

"Hello, hot guy... are you... are you married?"

"Look here, handsome..."

"What should I do to sleep with someone that handsome?"

Many girls' eyes had turned into heart shapes. Lots of pink hearts appeared to rise up in the air.

The young geniuses of all the other clans were annoyed by the obsessed girls.

"How is it useful to have a pretty face?"

"He has a pretty face, so what?"

"Watch me knock him down with three punches later on the stage!"

"I don't need three punches. It only takes one kick!"

"I hate those useless men who only have pretty little faces..."

"It may be inappropriate to beat him in front of the public. When

the opportunity comes, I will... do that thing to him and let him enjoy being a bloody handsome guy..."

"Beat him to death!"

"Ruin his face!"

...

Chapter 1094: Vie with Each Other

All the young men of the other clans glared at Ye Xiao who was slowly walking over. Their eyes were full of hostility. [Bloody bastard has a pretty face. Why? It pissed both gods and mortals!]

[Don't you know this is combat of life and death? You are good-looking, so what? We are not in a beauty pageant, are we?]

[In this place, a pretty face doesn't bring you victory, but strength does!]

Ye Xiao had just arrived, and he felt the hostile qi rolling against him in the air.

He was confused.

[What is it? What happened? I obviously don't know any of them. Why are they all aiming at me? Did I offend someone?]

After a while, he finally got to know the reason, but it only made him feel even more furious.

[Am I to be blamed just because of my handsome face?]

That was why everybody wanted to beat him. Even you guys, my honorable readers out there, want to punch him, don't you?

It was not his fault to have a handsome face, but it, of course, was his fault to show off in front of everybody!

...

The next moment, Ye Nantian went to see the leaders of the other clans as the new leader of Ye Clan. He was neither humble nor arrogant, and instead showed a dignified manner.

The image of a leader like that really shocked the others. [This new chief of Ye Clan isn't an ordinary man...]

They thought Ye Clan would be utterly weakened after the massacre, but now it seemed to be too optimistic to them. The

arena might not end up benefiting them as they wished!

The rules of the arena had been set. Nobody could change any of them. Ye Nantian, as the chief of Ye Clan, the host who provided most of the rewards, reaffirmed the rules of the combat.

"As we all agreed, all clans will hand in their Regeneration Ink Lotus, and we will gather all the lotuses in one place. All clans will draw to decide the rivals for the participants. One victory in a fight wins a lotus for the clan as the reward to the winner.

"Each clan sends one person to draw. The draw would appoint one's rival. After the first participant of a clan fails, the clan can send the second participant onto the stage to continue without a second draw.

"Whoever wins a fight can keep fighting the next rival if he or she decides to continue until he or she submits or gets defeated. There will be no limit to the number of combats!

"There are eighteen clans. Chiefs of the clans are judges.

"For the record, this is not combat of life and death. Do not go any further than necessary. We don't want anybody to die! We don't allow pursuing anybody in retreat and killing anybody unnecessarily!"

...

Ye Nantian loudly read the rules line by line.

The rules were all marked. The young men were all thrilled. Their faces turned red, and their eyes turned shiny. They couldn't wait.

The draw was finished pretty quickly.

Ye Clan seemed unlucky to get the first turn to go onto the stage.

Everybody knew that it was a good thing to go earlier than later if one was strong enough. It brought more chances to get more lotuses. However, the weak ones would only become cannon

fodders!

In the other clans' views, none of Ye Clan's men, including Ye Xiao, who was known as a powerful young cultivator, were actually decent in battle. They were utterly limited in power as none of them were above Dream Origin Stage. In their opinion, no matter who they were going to fight, they would be defeated miserably!

In Ye Clan's grandstand.

"Who goes first?" Ye Nantian blandly asked.

He honestly didn't think his nephews were able to win the fight. He had no different opinions from the people of the other clans. He saw only a few among the youngest generation, including Ye Zifeng, in a positive light. Unfortunately, those young men were all Ye Shuxin's people. They had already died in Ye Xiao's hand!

It wasn't a surprising fact that the best youngsters were all Ye Shuxin's people. They were talented in the first place, and Ye Shuxin favored them with all the resources in the clan. It wasn't a surprising thing that they couldn't become better than the others.

The young men from the other three groups who supported Ye Shuqing didn't get the resources they deserved because Ye Shuxin simply hated them. They had to cultivate all by themselves. That was why they were not doing quite well in cultivation!

Before Ye Nantian finished, Ye Liangchen stepped ahead and said, "Chief, I would like to fight for the first credit!"

"Urh?" The others were all shocked.

[Why would he jump out so quickly?]

The men in the leadership of Ye Clan all frowned when they saw Ye Liangchen taking the first turn.

Ye Liangchen was honestly doing okay in cultivation, but it was just not good enough to fight against the elites of the other clans.

However, he was quite excited and aspiring...

If they rejected him, it would hurt his enthusiasm, also the others'. Should they let him go? It might make them lose one lotus to the rival clan...

They started to look at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao rubbed his nose and said, "I guess I should go first. When I get defeated, Liangchen goes up to take revenge for me."

Ye Liangchen moaned, "Come on Brother Xiao, no kidding... There will be no chance for us after you go up there first... You can get through all the combats alone... If by any chance you are defeated, that means the enemy is even stronger than you. It would be hopeless for us to..."

The others nearly burst into waves of laughter.

They all thought, [No wonder he jumped out so quickly, knowing that he was weak...]

Ye Xiao laughed. "Brother Liangchen, you are flattering me. Maybe I will be knocked down at the first second I go up..."

After that, his clothes started to flick in the air, and he slid away like a piece of cloud floating in the sky. He flew up to the stage, and politely saluted by cupping his fists. "Ye Clan, Ye Xiao, humbly awaiting."

That was such a trigger to chaos. Suddenly, all the young men of the other clans had bloodshot eyes. Seventeen men actually jumped up and rushed to the stage at the same time like a swarm of bees.

"Let me!"

"No! I am first!"

"You get the hell off!"

"This is mine!"

"Who dares to snatch this from my hand will be my sworn enemy!"

A few men started to fight in advance for the chance to fight Ye Xiao.

Han Bingxue, who had been sneakily staying among Ye Clan people, nearly had his belly explode because he laughed so hard watching what was happening. [Look how they vie...]

[Hilarious...]

...

Chapter 1095: Only Need A Smack

If the young men who were fighting each other for a chance to beat Ye Xiao knew that the man they eagerly wanted to fight was one of the legendary godlike slayers who horribly killed a lot, what would they feel?

Most importantly, even though Ye Xiao was not as powerful as Xiao Monarch, he was already quite good. He appeared as a level five or six Spirit Origin Stage cultivator, but that was a disguise. In front of the young men who were in the same generation as him, he could be utterly arrogant and indifferent. Even if all the young men went up together to fight him, they would only end up in failure!

Not to mention Han Bingxue, Ye Xiao himself was also surprised and confused. [Why are they all so eager to get themselves beaten up on the stage? Do they think they're all invincible?]

When Ye Xiao was fighting for the position of the prime disciple in Cold Moon Palace, he was still weak, but now, he was different. When he fought on the stage in Cold Moon Palace, he was totally beaten down at the beginning. However, he eventually took control of everything after gathering energy bit by bit. Now, he was much more powerful than the potential opponents. There was no point for him to have a competition!

As he thought deeper, it reminded him of the time when he planned on teasing Ye Shuxin and his men. When he actually fought those men, he felt bored. So he changed his mind at the moment and made up his mind!

The result was the same, but he could do it the same way as he did to Ye Shuxin now...

He stood on the stage and looked at those men fighting each other down the stage, such a bunch of young lords in chaos. He wanted to say, 'Stop it! Why don't you all come together! I will save

lots of my time!'

However, he couldn't say it out frankly because they wouldn't do it. It would take a longer time for a decision.

After a while, they still couldn't decide who would fight Ye Xiao first. Ye Xiao impatiently said, "What are you fighting for? Don't you hear the rules? Who the hell picked the second draw? Get your ass up here! The draw of second in your hand makes you a real d*ckhead!" [1]

It pissed everybody off.

It was Li Clan that had picked the second. A young man rushed up in a fury, "I am..."

"You are what?"

Ye Xiao didn't let him finish talking but just smacked him on the face.

- Pah! -

The eldest young lord of Li Clan didn't even have time to stand firm on the stage or to tell everybody his name before he was hit away spinning in the air like a gyroscope. His face was twisted by the smack.

He flew out like he was lifted up by the clouds. When he hit the floor, although he tried to push with his feet to stand up, he just couldn't. - Puff!- He sat on the floor and realized that he was back in the seat that he took from the beginning.

What happened scared everybody.

That smack was not only full of power but also incredibly accurate!

Li Clan people were furious. "Our man wasn't ready for that yet! That was a sneak attack! It can't count!"

Ye Xiao didn't care. He smiled and said, "No problem. I am a nice guy. It doesn't count then. Tell him to come up again. I will wait

till he is completely ready before I start."

As he smiled, he half closed his eyes. The cold lights of murdering qi were shining in both of his eyes.

Li Clan people didn't answer.

Was that a sneak attack?

Obviously not!

The stage was strict. There was no mercy. Whoever stepped on the stage, they could be considered as ready. The fight began. Li Clan's young man had stepped on the stage but was slapped away by Ye Xiao at the first second. It was clearly Ye Xiao's victory!

Ye Xiao had restrained the power when he smacked that man. If he wanted to kill, he only needed to add ten percent of his full power to crack the man's skull. Some men with sharp eyes had known it. If the Li Clan young man was stupid to go up there again, he would definitely become a corpse!

They were in two completely different leagues! What was the point of the fight?

The young man was like a mantis trying to stop a chariot, an ant trying to shake a tree. He would only get himself killed on the stage.

After a while, the young man of Li Clan who got smacked down the stage still sat in his seat. Ye Xiao shouted, "Yo, boy! Are you coming up or not? At least say something! I am waiting to get a lotus here..."

Li Clan people stayed silent for a while and eventually couldn't let their man get killed. They announced awkwardly, "We have lost this one."

The judges announced, "Ye Clan wins a plant of Regeneration Ink Lotus!"

Ye Lianchen excitedly walked over to get a lotus from the man

who was decided to keep watch over the lotuses.

The other clans' people all showed a dark face.

They were not stupid. They had all realized that the young man from Ye Clan who stood on the stage was far stronger than level five of Spirit Origin Stage. He was so unbelievably strong that none of the youngsters of the clans could compare to him!

In other words, he could sweep down all the others on the stage on his own.

That meant Ye Clan was going to win all the lotuses because of Ye Xiao.

Ye Clan wouldn't lose the sixty high-quality lotuses. Instead, they would get twenty lotuses from each of the other clans!

The other clans worked so hard to make Ye Clan hold such an arena, yet it turned out they were giving away their own lotuses to Ye Clan!

All their hard work was going to benefit Ye Clan!

They were excitedly planning to take great advantages of Ye Clan. However, they failed and now they were handing their own lotuses to Ye Clan. It was typically going for wool and coming back shorn!

What could they do anyway? Could they ban Ye Xiao?

How?

He was younger than twenty!

He perfectly met the conditions!

All the other clans felt like swallowing a fly in the mouth!

It felt like swallowing a huge fly, which was still squirming inside their stomach!

However, the combat was started. How could they stop it?

There were so many clans watching. Could they just deny it and

break the agreement? Could they push it back into their asses when they were sh*tting?

They couldn't! They couldn't disgrace themselves like that!

What to do?

"Attrition!"

"One by one, each clan sends a man to fight him until he is tired!"

That was the only plan they could come up with at the moment.

...

[1] Just like Erhuo (二货), the word 'two' (二) means stupid.

Chapter 1096: People from Qiong-Hua Palace

[Though you are so incredibly powerful that you can easily defeat all the youngsters who are the same age as you, you are alone. How many nails can you endure even if you are an iron plate? How many fights can you win even if you have endless energy? There are lots of clans with lots of capable young men. We will fight you one by one. You are strong, but we have plenty of people. Let's see who can stand to the end!]

What happened next was Ye Xiao's personal show on the stage. One by one, the youngsters of the other clans fell off the stage!

One went up, one fell off!

One again...

Everybody who got up the stage would fall back down!

"Ye Clan won a plant of Regeneration Ink Lotus!"

"Ye Clan won a plant of Regeneration Ink Lotus."

...

The judge kept shouting the same words. He sounded quite bored and tired. There was a strong sense of depression in it...

His voice sounded like he had been beaten up eight hundred times. Anyway, it just didn't seem right.

After a while, over thirty lotuses were taken by Ye Clan.

Ye Xiao wouldn't care about such a few lotuses, especially the lotuses in such low quality. However, for the clans, those were something to support their lives.

They were watching the lotuses going to Ye Clan, so their eyes all turned red.

They had lost hope on the 'attrition' strategy which they had

decided not long earlier. If somebody could make Ye Xiao operate some of his final strikes or something more powerful, it might consume his energy a little. However, as the youngsters kept going up the stage, Ye Xiao didn't even seem to make any severe attacks. He didn't need to fight at all. What he did was just a smack one young man after another...

No matter how famous a young man was out in the district, he would be smacked and slammed off the stage just like all the others!

It had been over thirty fights, yet Ye Xiao didn't even sweat a bit, not to mention consuming energy!

His face didn't even turn red!

He breathed steadily, calm and peaceful.

His vigor, breath, attitude, aura, and posture... were killing it.

...

A few groups of people were moving over to the stage from far away, extremely fast!

These were the days when people came to collect Regeneration Ink Lotus. Not only Misty Cloud Palace, but also the other forces that needed it.

The other people didn't need it as much as Misty Cloud Palace, but they did need it!

Otherwise, Regeneration Lotuses wouldn't be in a top position in the medicinal plants ranking list!

The word Regeneration was not just a joke.

The lotus indeed could save lives!

...

"Ye Clan won a plant of Regeneration Ink Lotus again..." The man who made the announcement looked so sad. He was sweating and

trembling while staring straight forward.

All he had done was tell people who the winner was. Yet he looked more exhausted than Ye Xiao, who had fought over sixty fights.

Everybody could see and hear how tired the man was.

Ye Liangchen, who was responsible for taking the lotuses as the rewards, was pretending to be tired, but was, in fact, gloating. He wiped his forehead and smiled bitterly. "Oh heavens... My Brother Xiao is awesome, overwhelming, excellent. I, Liangchen, of Ye Clan come and go to take the heavy lotus. It is okay if it only makes me sweat, but it weakens my legs. I just can't get fat no matter what I eat. How do I make my leg stronger..."

Lots of people glared at him with the fire of anger in their eyes, as if they could kill him like that!

"Pah! Show appreciation to the fortunes you don't deserve, you bastard! We all want to take the lotus like you!" A man of another clan who was waiting to take the lotus stared at Ye Liangchen who had tears in the eyes.

One was showing off on the stage... another was trying so hard to pretend to be unappreciative...

Ye Liangchen not only won it by words, but also spoke a line that was forbidden in all time—I just can't get fat no matter what I eat..

[Goddam it, Ye Clan, you do have some real genius!]

After the time of a meal, nothing changed on the stage. It was the sixty-fifth fight Ye Xiao won!

Ye Clan people were all overjoyed.

They had saved all their lotuses, and what was next was to get more lotuses from other clans' contribution. Considering how powerful Ye Xiao was, they might get to have all the lotuses from the other clans...

Another young man in black clothes jumped up the stage. He was about to attack after telling his name.

At this moment, a bland but imperial voice sounded, "Wait!"

Everybody was shocked. They all looked to the direction where it sounded.

The crowd was spreading to two sides, making a path among them. Nine ladies, who were wearing white clothes, calmly walked over.

They were surrounded by a pleasant scent.

The nine ladies had similar garments—white clothes and silver scabbards. Each of them was tall and slim, beautiful, cool, and extraordinary.

The lady who stood in front donned a bun on top of her hair. She was elegant and cold, and had a beautiful face. Cold lights were twinkling in her eyes. As she walked, she never moved her gaze away from Ye Xiao who was on the stage.

Everybody who had looked at her was awed by her aura. They didn't even dare to breathe heavily. Suddenly, the entire place was silent.

The ladies were like fairies from the heavens descending to the world.

Although they were in this impure mundane world, they were still clean and exquisite, as if nobody could approach them.

A silver flower mark on their sleeves showed their identity!

Qiong-Hua Palace!

They were people of the three Great Palaces, which was as famous as Misty Cloud Palace!

Ye Nantian's face suddenly turned dark. He didn't seem to be calm and steady anymore!

People in the other clans showed different expressions on their faces, but they were obviously gloating.

[Aren't you Ye Clan such a powerful clan? Aren't you going to take all the lotuses? Aren't you going to be the greatest of today?]

[Aha! Look what happens now! Let's see whether you can wait till Misty Cloud Palace comes. I guess you will have to be powerful enough to deal with the ladies from Qiong-Hua Palace.]

[They all knew why the ladies would come.]

The existence of Ye Nantian and Ye Xiao was the only reason.

...

Chapter 1097: Clash!

Qiong-Hua Palace's people didn't say anything and just moved directly to the stage. Ye Nantian stood up immediately.

Ye Xiao, who was standing on the stage, looked cold in the eyes. He turned to Ye Nantian with a smile on his face, then waved a hand and blandly said, "Let me take care of it."

Ye Nantian took a deep breath. He didn't look good, but he never interfered with his son's decision. He restrained himself and didn't do anything. He believed his son would never do anything reckless. Since Ye Xiao said he would take care of it, then he certainly would.

The lady who was leading the people of Qiong-Hua Palace flew up slowly, like a cloud of fairies or a patch of snow. She got on the stage in seconds, but she didn't seem to be paying attention to Ye Xiao. She stared at Ye Nantian and coldly said, "Ye Nantian, is this your son?"

Ye Nantian blandly said, "What? Isn't he? Do you think he is your son if you are so sure he is not mine?"

Somebody burst into laughter. It was Han Bingxue.

Ye Nantian just wanted to give a harsh response, not to humiliate her. However, after the laughter of Han Bingxue, what Ye Nantian said seemed different, like he was taking advantage of the lady.

The lady blushed and angrily retorted, "I am asking you! Is this your and Yue Gongxue's son?"

Ye Nantian half closed his eyes and said, "Are you questioning me?"

The lady sneered, "Yes, if you think so."

Ye Nantian raged up with killing intent in his eyes. An overwhelming aura surrounded the entire place. It shocked the

sky.

He was below Dao Origin Stage, not powerful enough to compare with the world's best cultivators. However, he had been sharpening his aura in the Land of Han-Yang and eventually made it overwhelming to an unimaginable level. Even the great cultivators like Xuan Bing might lose in an aura competition against Ye Nantian!

At this moment, Ye Xiao suddenly rushed over and stood between the lady and Ye Nantian. He smiled and said, "This beauty, how could you not notice such a glaring handsome guy around you?"

The lady didn't even look at him. She coldly said, "Get away!"

Ye Xiao laughed and said, "Look, beauty, I am truly glaringly handsome. Oh right. Are you married?"

The lady's expression changed as she slowly turned to Ye Xiao. She stared at his face and coldly said, "Get out of my way. You underbred bastard who is raised by a father and bred by no mother! I am your mother's sister disciple!"

Ye Xiao's face turned fierce, and he coldly responded, "Underbred? Raised by a father and bred by no mother? If you didn't capture my mother and stop her from seeing me, would I be bred by no mother? Underbred? Never mind. I don't think it is necessary to talk about this to a small figure like you! You said you are my mother's sister disciple? Are you trying to relate to me?"

"Impudent!"

The lady was cold and annoyed. "Ye Nantian, is this how you educate your son?"

Ye Nantian disdainfully said, "It is none of your farting business how I educate my son!"

The lady coldly said, "Yue Gongxue was the Saintess of Qiong-Hua Palace. She is never allowed to have kids! Ye Nantian, you

abducted her through flattery, stained her purity, and disgraced Qiong-Hua Palace! There is no way you can be spared! However, we spared you. Unexpectedly, now you, with your son, showed up again with all the lies and deceptions!"

He looked around Ye Clan people with a terrifying expression in the eyes. "Where is Ye Tianchen? What is wrong with you Ye Clan? Didn't you expel him already? Who allowed him to return? How could he openly appear here... What does it mean? Is this what you want to show us Qiong-Hua Palace?"

Ye Clan people were all emotionless. None of them answered.

The lady was even angrier. "Why don't you say something? Are you mute? Where is Ye Tianchen? ... Wait? Ye Nantian, why are you sitting in the middle of these..."

Then she was shocked. "You are their new chief!"

She was angry about the unbelievable fact!

[Qiong-Hua Palace gave you an order to expel this man, yet you actually violated it. You actually have made him your leader and supported him?]

[You are audacious, aren't you? All of you!]

[This is humiliating Qiong-Hua Palace.]

Ye Nantian blandly said, "Chief of Ye Clan, Ye Nantian, with respect, humbly greet you, Fairy Cheng."

Fairy Cheng's face was becoming quite pleasant to watch now.

When she realized and confirmed Ye Nantian was the present Chief of Ye Clan, the flame of anger in her heart was rising up abruptly!

She raised up her head and stared at all the Ye Clan people from one to another. In her eyes, there was an extremely sharp coldness. She spoke horribly, "Good. Great... Well done, Ye Clan. You are all stupidly fearless!"

Then she shouted loudly, "I don't have time to talk to you bunch of losers! Tell Ye Tianchen to move his ass over to talk to me!"

Her terrible voice was honestly opposite to her pretty face. She was showing the ferocity unbefitting of her stature.

Ye Nantian indifferently said, "All things in Ye Clan, every single one, is under my charge. Forefather will not be disturbed by trivial matters of the sect. Whatever you want to talk, Fairy Cheng, you can feel free to talk to me. As for moving the ass up and stuff... If you insist, you can move your ass to go to him."

"What did you just say?" Fairy Cheng couldn't believe what she had just heard. She couldn't believe that somebody actually dared to talk to her like that!

"Are you deaf, honorable Fairy Cheng? Our forefather is too busy to move his ass over to talk to you. If you truly want to talk to him, you can move your ass and go pay him a visit. You can show us how to move the ass here and there properly anyway!"

Fairy Cheng was gasping. She stared at Ye Nantian and spoke in a sharp tone word by word, "How dare you talk to me like that?"

Ye Nantian showed a sneering smile and blandly said, "Why can't I talk to you like that?"

Fairy Cheng's eyes were filled with extreme anger. The flame of anger in her heart was about to burst. Once her anger erupted, she would make her attack immediately.

Ye Xiao half closed his eyes while indifferently staring at this Fairy Cheng. His hands were inside the sleeves, with all his hidden weapons in hand.

[If you move, I will kill you all without mercy!]

[I don't care who you are!]

[You will be the first Qiong-Hua Palace disciple I kill, but not the last.]

[You want to fight? we fight!]

However, even though Fairy Cheng was furious like crazy, she didn't start a fight. Instead, she was slowing down her breath so as to calm herself down.

"You... Forget it. I won't have such pointless conflict with you. Answer me. Can you make all decisions, for real?" Her pretty eyes were full of disdain. She didn't even bother to cover it.

At the same time, she looked at Ye Clan people disdainfully out of the corner of her eyes. The suppression from her was getting down on them!

"The Chief can make all calls!" They all stood straight with their chests up at the same time. They looked back at the Fairy of Qiong-Hua Palace and spoke together, "He decides everything!"

"We will embrace death if he makes a decision that we should die!"

"He can decide it on his own!"

On these people's faces, there endless courage and determination!

...

Chapter 1098: Full Support!

They would never cower in front of Qiong-Hua Palace anymore, even though they used to bend before those ladies' eyes!

They would rather die now!

When a man died, what happened was that a p*nis would point up to the sky. As simple as that. Instead of kneeling on the floor in humiliation, they would rather die in glory!

[No matter how you step high above us all, we will never back off this time!]

They all stood together with their chests up while speaking at the same time. In everybody else's eyes, these people were a whole at the moment!

They were unable to break apart!

To kill one of them, the lady would have to kill them all!

They were like one entire iron plate together!

People of the other clans had been watching the show all the time. They were appreciatively hoping Ye Clan people would be beaten down miserably. However, when they saw what just happened, they all fell into silence.

They suddenly felt respectful to those people from the bottom of their hearts! It was irresistible!

All the clans in Oracle District were on the same boat. They all got bullied by the great forces in Qing-Yun Realm. The other clans always understood how Ye Clan people felt in front of a great force's suppression. The only difference was now Ye Clan had spoken out the words the others never dared to speak!

That was all!

The leaders of those clans all asked themselves in the heart. [If my people are facing Qiong-Hua Palace's suppression, how many of

them would be fearless like these Ye Clan people?]

[How many of them would speak out those words?]

'He decides everything!'

'We will embrace death if he makes a decision that we should die!'

How brave and fearless!

Qiong-Hua Palace's nine ladies changed the expression on their faces immediately!

They were not only angry but also surprised by it.

[Since when did these cowards of Ye Clan become so brave and fearless?]

Fairy Cheng was turning more and more distant—killing intent was rising in her heart. Her eyes were icy. She stared at Ye Nantian who was slowly standing up. She looked around the people of Ye Clan around him. She hesitated at the beginning, but then became cruelly decisive. In the end, there was only killing intent left in her eyes!

She slowly raised her right hand and emotionlessly said, "Suit the action to the word. It is too late to change your mind. Ye Clan disobeyed the order and offended Qiong-Hua Palace's prestige! You are not forgiven!"

"People of Qiong-Hua Palace! Let us..."

She paused and then spoke through her teeth, "Kill!"

The word was like an ice ball hitting on a jade plate in silence!

It seemed all things were settled after the word came out!

Everybody was trembling after hearing that word.

"Aye!" the other eight ladies answered. - Shring! - Nine long swords were drawn out of the scabbards at the same time!

"I dare you!"

Ye Xiao looked had ruthless expression. His fierce eyes made him like a hawk hovering and searching for food. He shouted with great ferocity.

Fairy Cheng was surprised. She turned around and looked at Ye Xiao, with only disdain and indifference in her eyes. It seemed she was saying with pleasure, 'You are eventually dying in my hand.'

Ye Xiao didn't understand why she would have such pleasure. After all, it was the first time they met each other. She shouldn't hate him that much, however, he was enlightened after a while. [This woman must be the biggest rival to my mother in the old days when they were fighting for the seat of Saintess!]

[She must have become the new Saintess now.]

It explained everything. She hated Yue Gongxue. She wanted the worst for Yue Gongxue. The eagerness to destroy the husband and son of Yue Gongxue had filled her heart!

Ye Clan had been humble and obedient to Qiong-Hua Palace, so she never had a chance to hurt them. However, she had it now.

"Kill!"

Fairy Cheng was overjoyed in her heart but still acted cold and solemn. She added a short but ruthless order.

Suddenly, a mass of extremely cold qi filled the atmosphere.

Everybody felt chilled.

They had been astonished by Ye Xiao's mighty power, but now all they felt were fear and terror. [It might feel good when speaking out something from the bottom of the heart, but what then?]

[They are going to see what then. Ye Nantian may have been improved a lot during the years, and he even has a son who could sweep off all the other clans' young generations, however, what power do they have to contend against Qiong-Hua Palace's power?]

[The stronger fist is the law in Qing-Yun Realm. Without

absolute surpassing power, the bold words could only bring them disaster to their family, their future, their clan!]

[Ye Clan's collapse is a lesson to all the other clans!]

[They have seriously offended Qiong-Hua Palace. They are dead!]

However, at the moment, somebody shouted coldly again.

"I dare you!"

It was far from the sky.

It was full of prestige!

Another group of ladies showed up from the sky like fairies descending from heaven.

They were wearing white clothes too. However, on the necklines of their robes, there were patterns of clouds. That showed their identity.

Misty Cloud Palace!

The lady in front of the others landed before Fairy Cheng, exactly between her and Ye Nantian.

Everybody felt that she was a solid iron wall that separated the two people!

Fairy Cheng slightly frowned and said, "Li Yunxuan, what are you doing?"

The ladies from Misty Cloud Palace showed up right in the center of the conflict between Qiong-Hua Palace and Ye Clan. It was apparent that they were going to interfere. If Fairy Cheng didn't want to, or maybe didn't dare to offend Misty Cloud Palace, she would have attacked in the first second!

Apparently, a bigger fist made the law was a rule that also fit for the super forces!

Qiong-Hua Palace saw all the forces in Oracle District as garbage. They scolded them, insulted them, and took things from them as

they wished. However, as they encountered a stronger force, they would be awed too!

Even though Li Yunxuan wasn't precisely a person Fairy Cheng would be afraid of, the power Li Yunxuan represented was scary enough!

Li Yunxuan was a middle-aged lady with an elegant look. She coldly said, "Ye Clan is Misty Cloud Palace's important ally. The Chief of Ye Clan is our honorable guest! How dare you treat him impolitely?"

As she said so, even Fairy Cheng, who was supposed to be insufferably mad, actually widely opened her eyes instead.

She was unbelievably staring at Li Yunxuan.

Not only her, but all the people of the other clans also opened their eyes at the same time. At this moment, their eyes seemed to pop out the eye frames and shot out.

[What?]

[Important ally? The Chief of Ye Clan is Misty Cloud Palace's honorable guest?]

[Is there something wrong with my ears?]

...

Chapter 1099: A Confrontation between Two Palaces!

[When did Misty Cloud Palace... tell anybody about it?]

[No. In spite of whether they ever told anybody, isn't it too shocking? How could you say that? Do you know what you are talking about?]

[Didn't you raise the Chief of Ye Clan and the entire Ye Clan too high?]

[Are you insane?]

[What do you mean an important ally? Since when did Ye Clan have such power?]

[And Ye Nantian... He has just become the Chief. How could he be an honorable guest of Misty Cloud Palace?]

[This is, no matter what, unbelievable and wrong!]

Not only Qiong-Hua Palace and the other clans couldn't believe it, even Ye Clan people themselves were confused. They all kept their mouths open because of the astonishment.

[What is going on?]

[Isn't it too much a compliment? We are flattered! We may even fail to accept it!]

Fairy Li of Misty Cloud Palace wasn't a stranger to the clans in Oracle District. After all, she had been taking charge of this area for many years. She was always arrogant and frank in front of those people.

Sometimes, when a clan didn't hand in enough lotuses, she would unrelentingly baste them right in their faces. She had treated people of the clans in Oracle District as servants and farmers.

She had never talked to anybody with a kind and pleasant countenance since she came to this place!

Ye Shuxin was even worse than a servant to Fairy Li. He was like a pimping grandson to her. Sometimes, even their forefather, Ye Tianchen, could only be coldly scolded in front of Fairy Li!

However, suddenly, Ye Clan became an important ally of Misty Cloud Palace?

It was already inconceivable, but actually, Ye Nantian, who only became the new Chief a few days back, became Misty Cloud Palace's honorable guest!

That was... absurd, wasn't it?

It was so unspeakably unbelievable!

Everybody surprisedly stared at Ye Nantian. [This new Chief of Ye Clan is actually so excellent?]

Unexpectedly, what they saw was Ye Nantian widely opening his mouth in surprise, too.

He looked shocked too.

[I... I... Since when am I powerful like this... Why am I so awesome?]

[Why didn't I know it myself?]

[Why?]

When everybody was still in shock, Fairy Li, who just astonished all the others, did something even more shocking. She turned around and faced Ye Nantian with a humble smile like the wind in spring that could melt the ice of the winter. She actually bowed and said, "Chief Ye, I am late. Please forgive me."

She was respectful and cautious, like a small figure from the bottom of the society had suddenly met a significant figure from the upper class with all her respects.

The humble way she acted shocked everybody else again.

People's eyes not only shot out from the eye frames but also exploded off the eye frames! [1]

[Holy sh*t!]

[What the hell happened?]

[What is going on?]

[This has gone too far, hasn't it?]

[How could Ye Nantian be treated so respectfully like this? Isn't it insane?]

Ye Nantian was also utterly surprised, but the lady was showing respect to him, he had to give a polite and decent response, suppressing down the rolling astonishment in his heart, "You are being too humble, Fairy Li. You are a reasonable person, who just spoke justice for us. I am grateful for it. Who am I to forgive you?"

Li Yunxuan was still utterly respectful, "What are you talking about, Chief Ye? I will never disobey your words, Chief. I would even die for you!"

The entire place was bursting into an uproar!

[What the f*ck! What is it? She would die for him?]

[Are they still people of Misty Cloud Palace?]

[What has Ye Nantian done? Did he do anything? Who is he? What has he been through all these years? How did he make Misty Cloud Palace respect him like this?]

[Did he hook up with not only the Saintess of Qiong-Hua Palace but also some important people in Misty Cloud Palace, like an elder or something, because he is handsome?]

[Why would Misty Cloud Palace's lady be so humble to him?]

Well, their eyes saw reality, and they did have a reasonable guess, although it was Ye Nantian's son who had hooked up with an elder

of Misty Cloud Palace instead of Ye Nantian himself. However, what caused the current situation was not because somebody hooked up with somebody else... No matter what, they had a fair guess...

Ye Nantian was shocked and just stayed in silence.

Li Yunxuan continued, "Justice is inside everybody's heart. No one confounds right and wrong. Qiong-Hua Palace people are acting in opposition to right principles, disrespecting others' interests. What we need is only one word from Chief Ye, and we will drive their people out of Oracle District! No one from Qiong-Hua Palace will be allowed to enter this district ever!"

"Hiss...."

Lots of people hissed at the same time.

Everybody felt like the world had gone crazy, that it was going to explode or something...

Nobody believed what they just heard!

[Are we all in a nightmare?]

[This is too horrible, isn't it?]

They couldn't believe what Li Yunxuan just said. [What did she just say?]

What she said, she wasn't speaking as an individual. When she spoke, she represented Misty Cloud Palace. The promise she made was a promise of Misty Cloud Palace.

As long as Ye Nantian gave them a word, Misty Cloud Palace would declare a war against Qiong-Hua Palace!

They would fight to the death!

One of the two grand palaces would die eventually!

That was it.

Misty Cloud Palace and Qiong-Hua Palace, as two of the most

powerful great forces in the realm, once they started a war, a war only could be stopped by the death of one side—such a situation would only lead to countless corpses with blood floating like rivers on the ground!

At least a million influential cultivators of the world would be involved into the war! It would be a disaster to the martial world!

It would be the biggest disaster in ten thousand years!

It would be more horrible than the disaster Xiao Monarch had caused before!

All that it took to start such a tragic war was a word from Ye Nantian!

What was needed was only Ye Nantian's nod.

Fairy Cheng nearly exploded because of the fury in her heart. She glared at Li Yunxuan with confusion. "Li Yunxuan, do you even know what you are talking about? Do you know what you are doing? What happens today only concerns the dignity of us Qiong-Hua Palace. What does it concern Misty Cloud Palace? What do you want by interfering with us? Do you only want to show your authority and prestige?"

...

[1] Figuratively...

Chapter 1100: Little Brother Disciple?

Li Yunxuan blandly said, "I said it. Justice is inside everybody's heart. No one confounds right and wrong. The image of how you arrogantly domineered in here is vividly displayed in our heads. How could you still try to make what's wrong into right? What will be brought to you is shame. By the way, I don't care whether it is personal hatred or official conflict between you and Ye Clan. All I want to tell you are two points..." Li Yunxuan took a breath and solemnly said, "First, Ye Nantian is our honorable guest. We Misty Cloud Palace disciples will follow his will! Second, it is a decision of the Great Prime Elder, Xuan Bing, of Misty Cloud Palace. All disciples should obey it! No matter what we decide, nobody interferes with it. No matter who, no matter what force, whoever dares to point fingers at us, we will have to return a fight!"

"Dead or alive!"

Li Yunxuan looked at Fairy Cheng. "Cheng Bingmei, do you understand?"

Fairy Cheng raged up. "Li Yunxuan, who do you think you are? Not to mention you, even the entire Misty Cloud Palace means little to us! Do you think everybody in the world should be afraid of you? How dare you try to bully Qiong-Hua Palace? You are not that strong yet!"

Li Yunxuan spoke with a fake smile, "We never care about whether people are afraid of us or not. You can try to offend our dignity though. I am here, representing the honorable great Elder Xuan Bing. What I do, I do it under her instruction! What it takes to drive all disciples of Misty Cloud Palace to fight with our blood and lives is only one word from the great Elder Xuan Bing! We would die for her! Cheng Bingmei, answer me. When you are speaking, when you are doing this, do you represent Qiong-Hua Palace?"

"If you do, we will start the war immediately with our lives!"

Li Yunxuan was aggressive.

When she said the words 'the great Elder Xuan Bing', it felt like she was mentioning a goddess she admired the most, full of sincerity!

Full of trust!

Everybody heard it.

She meant every word she said!

Xuan Bing was the god in Misty Cloud Palace.

She was the supremacy!

She was not the Prime Master, but her words were undoubted in Misty Cloud Palace. Nobody questioned it. She spoke one word, and everybody in Misty Cloud Palace would be willing to die for her without any hesitation!

Ye Xiao exchanged glances with Han Bingxue, who was hiding among the crowd. They both understood.

Misty Cloud Palace did this because of Xuan Bing.

Honestly, neither of them ever expected Xuan Bing to do such a great favor.

She would actually declare war against Qiong-Hua Palace for Ye Clan!

That was such a huge favor!

In fact, Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue both thought... that what Xuan Bing did was abnormal.

If somebody in Misty Cloud Palace or Xuan Bing herself showed up to defend Ye Clan, it would be reasonable. However, the entire Misty Cloud Palace was defending Ye Clan now. They weren't just against Qiong-Hua Palace. They seemed to be against the whole world! How unusual!

She was doing too much to return Ye Xiao's favor...

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue couldn't believe it.

[Has she lost her mind?]

The two of them had the same thought.

Ye Xiao had been ready to fight, and Han Bingxue was prepared to show up as soon as he could. Even though Ye Xiao wasn't strong enough, Han Bingxue was powerful enough to shock Qiong-Hua Palace!

Han Bingxue called Ye Xiao boss, and he always followed Ye Xiao as a younger brother, but in fact, he was not any weaker than Xiao Monarch. He was as dominant as Xiao Monarch or Fierce Blade. Now, he had spent a long time with Xuan Bing. Although he was being tortured most of the time, it was a significant improvement for him to be tortured by a great cultivator like Xuan Bing. Besides, Ye Xiao had given him lots of Heaven Climbing Dan beads. It would be just a matter of time for him to reach the top of Dao Origin Stage. Such power couldn't sweep the entire Qiong-Hua Palace, but was powerful enough to deal with the current situation!

As it appeared, he didn't need to anymore.

Two other figures were approaching far from the sky.

The two men saw Ye Xiao on the stage before they got down. They were so shocked that they nearly fell off the sky...

...

Cheng Bingmei was choked for a while, and then gritted her teeth and said, "Justice stays among us. The truth will be revealed sooner or later. Ye Clan humiliated Qiong-Hua Palace in the first place. You Misty Cloud Palace is sticking your hand to the wrong place. This is not the end! No matter how arrogant you are, you should give us a fair explanation!"

That was actually showing weakness.

Qiong-Hua Palace was so arrogant and tough that they never got bullied. However, now as she spoke, Misty Cloud Palace was bullying them. That was showing their weakness!

Something more surprising was happening...

Before Cheng Bingmei finished talking, a loud and clear voice sounded, "If Misty Cloud Palace declares war against Qiong-Hua Palace, we Cold Moon Palace are in!"

As the loud and clear voice sounded, two men flew to the stage like a breeze.

One of them was tall and standing straight up, tilting his head, obstinate and unruly.

The other was holding his sword, who looked cold and indifferent, with a pair of sharp eyes.

Many of the people recognized them both!

Cold Moon Twin Wings!

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian!

They were two super influential figures in the world for ordinary people in the martial world.

Super powerful cultivators of Cold Moon Palace!

Cheng Bingmei was furious. She did fear Misty Cloud Palace, but she never feared Cold Moon Palace. After all, the three great palaces were all beyond the seven great sects. She glared at Zhan Yunfei, who just did the talking, and shouted, "Zhan Yunfei, you just arrived. What do you know? What has it to do with you Cold Moon Palace anyway? Don't get yourself into a trouble you don't have to be involved into! You are going to step into a negative situation!"

Zhan Yunfei arrogantly raised his head and coldly said, "It is not your decision to make. We decide whether it concerns us or not. Soon, you will know why it is our business! Besides, I don't need to

explain anything to you!"

Han Bingxue, who was still hiding, gritted his teeth.

[Holy hell. Those should be my lines...]

After that, Zhan Yunfei stared at the stage like he was going to swallow somebody. He gritted his teeth and said, "Little Brother Disciple, what a capable man you are... You played me well!"

Zhu Jiutian was also annoyed and didn't know whether to cry or to laugh.

The crowd was confused. [Little Brother Disciple?]

[Who are they talking to?]

[Who is their little Brother Disciple?]

[This is incredibly unbelievable, isn't it?]

...

Table of Contents

[Realms In The Firmament](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1001: Concubine? Why Not!](#)

[Chapter 1002: Strong Background](#)

[Chapter 1003: My Name Is Xuan Bing!](#)

[Chapter 1004: Because of You](#)

[Chapter 1005: Xuan Bing's Worry](#)

[Chapter 1006: The Secret of Oracle District!](#)

[Chapter 1007: Suspicion](#)

[Chapter 1008: Mountain of All Medicines!](#)

[Chapter 1009: Lots of Weirdos](#)

[Chapter 1010: Eldritch Youngsters](#)

[Chapter 1011: People of the Ye Clan!](#)

[Chapter 1012: Eventful Clan](#)

[Chapter 1013: Crisis on the Ye Clan](#)

[Chapter 1014: I Have Been There](#)

[Chapter 1015: Why Would It Change?](#)

[Chapter 1016: Different Intentions](#)

[Chapter 1017: Blockhead](#)

[Chapter 1018: Exclusive!](#)

[Chapter 1019: Sleepless Night!](#)

[Chapter 1020: Is It Him?](#)

[Chapter 1021: Improve by Leaps and Bounds, Ning Biluo](#)

[Chapter 1022: That Night!](#)

[Chapter 1023: Forefather of the Ye Clan](#)

[Chapter 1024: Survival Rule](#)

[Chapter 1025: Equal Match](#)

[Chapter 1026: Enter Together!](#)

[Chapter 1027: Mudslinging of Both Sides](#)

[Chapter 1028: Heaven Treasure Mountain](#)

[Chapter 1029: Gradualness](#)

[Chapter 1030: Triple Layers of Heaven](#)

[Chapter 1031: Streams of Spiritual Beasts](#)

[Chapter 1032: Beasts Off](#)

[Chapter 1033: Summon](#)

[Chapter 1034: Asking For Direction](#)

[Chapter 1035: Nine-layer Valley Awaits Monarch](#)

[Chapter 1036: Transferred Out](#)

[Chapter 1037: Waiting!](#)

[Chapter 1038: The Fourth Person](#)

[Chapter 1039: Master Tianji](#)

[Chapter 1040: Real Trial Begins](#)

[Chapter 1041: Ye Clan's Good Harvest](#)

[Chapter 1042: Rainbow Cinnabar Fruit](#)

[Chapter 1043: All Good Stuffs](#)

[Chapter 1044: So Despicable!](#)

[Chapter 1045: Be Fooled](#)

[Chapter 1046: True Start!](#)

[Chapter 1047: Dominator of the Firmament](#)

[Chapter 1048: Gamble of the Strong](#)

[Chapter 1049: To Let You Get Punched!](#)

[Chapter 1050: Disorientation Array](#)

[Chapter 1051: Chief Is In!](#)

[Chapter 1052: Life Path!](#)

[Chapter 1053: Miserable Man!](#)

[Chapter 1054: Hard to Take Someone Down With Him](#)

[Chapter 1055: The Gate to Heavens Opened; Monarch Laughed Upon All](#)

[Chapter 1056: Han Bingxue Went Crazy](#)

[Chapter 1057: Bing'er, Is It You?](#)

[Chapter 1058: Something Wrong](#)

[Chapter 1059: Standardized Cultivating Tea](#)

[Chapter 1060: A Thousand Jade Lotuses!](#)

[Chapter 1061: A Gift to You!](#)

[Chapter 1062: So Long For Now](#)

[Chapter 1063: Xuan Bing's Heart](#)

[Chapter 1064: Left and Return](#)

[Chapter 1065: Is This a Dream?](#)

[Chapter 1066: I Will Come Back!](#)

[Chapter 1067: Ye Xiao's Ambivalence](#)

[Chapter 1068: Space Changed](#)

[Chapter 1069: I Have Plenty More](#)

[Chapter 1070: One Stomp Shook the World](#)

[Chapter 1071: Join Together to Attack](#)

[Chapter 1072: Nothing to Do with Me](#)
[Chapter 1073: It Was Me](#)
[Chapter 1074: Doesn't Look Good](#)
[Chapter 1075: Ye Xiao Is Home](#)
[Chapter 1076: Generous Han Bingxue](#)
[Chapter 1077: The Night of Miracle](#)
[Chapter 1078: Enticement of the Art of Dan](#)
[Chapter 1079: One's Self Was the Key](#)
[Chapter 1080: Come with Trouble](#)
[Chapter 1081: Overwhelming Aura](#)
[Chapter 1082: Ye Xiao Showed Up](#)
[Chapter 1083: I Am Awesome!](#)
[Chapter 1084: Give It A Try](#)
[Chapter 1085: What Is Going On?](#)
[Chapter 1086: How About We Kill Them All?](#)
[Chapter 1087: Real Massacre!](#)
[Chapter 1088: Ye Nantian's Lesson](#)
[Chapter 1089: Have to Let It Out](#)
[Chapter 1090: Outspoken](#)
[Chapter 1091: Restructure the Leadership of Ye Clan](#)
[Chapter 1092: All Settled](#)
[Chapter 1093: Show Up](#)
[Chapter 1094: Vie with Each Other](#)
[Chapter 1095: Only Need A Smack](#)
[Chapter 1096: People from Qiong-Hua Palace](#)
[Chapter 1097: Clash!](#)
[Chapter 1098: Full Support!](#)
[Chapter 1099: A Confrontation between Two Palaces!](#)
[Chapter 1100: Little Brother Disciple?](#)